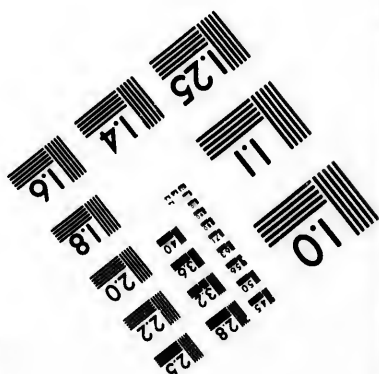
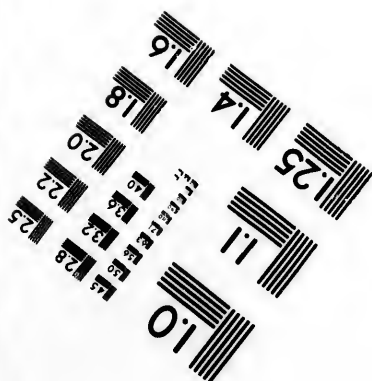
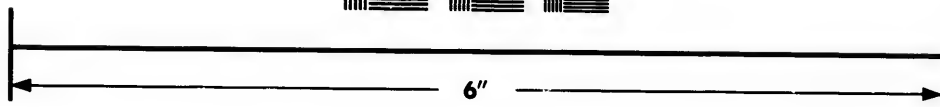
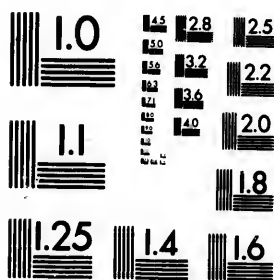


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

**CIHM/ICMH
Microfiche
Series.**

**CIHM/ICMH
Collection de
microfiches.**



Canadian Institute for Historical Microreproductions / Institut canadien de microreproductions historiques

© 1983

Technical and Bibliographic Notes/Notes techniques et bibliographiques

The Institute has attempted to obtain the best original copy available for filming. Features of this copy which may be bibliographically unique, which may alter any of the images in the reproduction, or which may significantly change the usual method of filming, are checked below.

L'Institut a microfilmé le meilleur exemplaire qu'il lui a été possible de se procurer. Les détails de cet exemplaire qui sont peut-être uniques du point de vue bibliographique, qui peuvent modifier une image reproduite, ou qui peuvent exiger une modification dans la méthode normale de filmage sont indiqués ci-dessous.

- ☐ Coloured covers/
Couverture de couleur
- ☐ Covers damaged/
Couverture endommagée
- ☐ Covers restored and/or laminated/
Couverture restaurée et/ou pelliculée
- ☐ Cover title missing/
Le titre de couverture manque
- ☐ Coloured maps/
Cartes géographiques en couleur
- ☐ Coloured ink (i.e. other than blue or black)/
Encre de couleur (i.e. autre que bleue ou noire)
- ☐ Coloured plates and/or illustrations/
Planches et/ou illustrations en couleur
- ☐ Bound with other material/
Relié avec d'autres documents
- ☐ Tight binding may cause shadows or distortion along interior margin/
La reliure serrée peut causer de l'ombre ou de la distortion le long de la marge intérieure
- ☐ Blank leaves added during restoration may appear within the text. Whenever possible, these have been omitted from filming/
Il se peut que certaines pages blanches ajoutées lors d'une restauration apparaissent dans le texte, mais, lorsque cela était possible, ces pages n'ont pas été filmées.
- ☐ Additional comments:/
Commentaires supplémentaires:

- ☐ Coloured pages/
Pages de couleur
- ☐ Pages damaged/
Pages endommagées
- ☐ Pages restored and/or laminated/
Pages restaurées et/ou pelliculées
- ☒ Pages discoloured, stained or foxed/
Pages décolorées, tachetées ou piquées
- ☐ Pages detached/
Pages détachées
- ☒ Showthrough/
Transparence
- ☐ Quality of print varies/
Qualité inégale de l'impression
- ☐ Includes supplementary material/
Comprend du matériel supplémentaire
- ☐ Only edition available/
Seule édition disponible
- ☐ Pages wholly or partially obscured by errata slips, tissues, etc., have been refilmed to ensure the best possible image/
Les pages totalement ou partiellement obscurcies par un feuillet d'errata, une pelure, etc., ont été filmées à nouveau de façon à obtenir la meilleure image possible.

This item is filmed at the reduction ratio checked below/
Ce document est filmé au taux de réduction indiqué ci-dessous.

10X	14X	18X	22X	26X	30X
<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
12X	16X	20X	24X	28X	32X

The copy filmed here has been reproduced thanks to the generosity of:

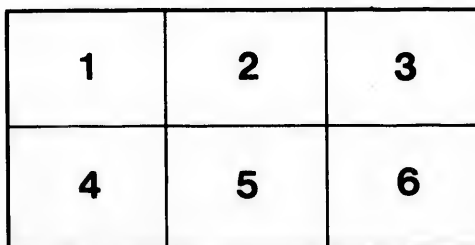
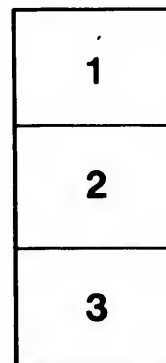
National Library of Canada

The images appearing here are the best quality possible considering the condition and legibility of the original copy and in keeping with the filming contract specifications.

Original copies in printed paper covers are filmed beginning with the front cover and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression, or the back cover when appropriate. All other original copies are filmed beginning on the first page with a printed or illustrated impression, and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression.

The last recorded frame on each microfiche shall contain the symbol \rightarrow (meaning "CONTINUED"), or the symbol ∇ (meaning "END"), whichever applies.

Maps, plates, charts, etc., may be filmed at different reduction ratios. Those too large to be entirely included in one exposure are filmed beginning in the upper left hand corner, left to right and top to bottom, as many frames as required. The following diagrams illustrate the method:



L'exemplaire filmé fut reproduit grâce à la générosité de:

Bibliothèque nationale du Canada

Les images suivantes ont été reproduites avec le plus grand soin, compte tenu de la condition et de la netteté de l'exemplaire filmé, et en conformité avec les conditions du contrat de filmage.

Les exemplaires originaux dont la couverture en papier est imprimée sont filmés en commençant par le premier plat et en terminant soit par la dernière page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration, soit par le second plat, selon le cas. Tous les autres exemplaires originaux sont filmés en commençant par la première page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration et en terminant par la dernière page qui comporte une telle empreinte.

Un des symboles suivants apparaîtra sur la dernière image de chaque microfiche, selon le cas: le symbole \rightarrow signifie "A SUIVRE", le symbole ∇ signifie "FIN".

Les cartes, planches, tableaux, etc., peuvent être filmés à des taux de réduction différents. Lorsque le document est trop grand pour être reproduit en un seul cliché, il est filmé à partir de l'angle supérieur gauche, de gauche à droite, et de haut en bas, en prenant le nombre d'images nécessaire. Les diagrammes suivants illustrent la méthode.

errata
to

pelure,
on à

The Manner of curing the Sick in California
Front. to Vol. II.



Sorcerers of California.

Vol. II.

A NATURAL and CIVIL
H I S T O R Y
O F
CALIFORNIA:

C O N T A I N I N G

An accurate Description of that COUNTRY,
Its Soil, Mountains, Harbours, Lakes, Rivers,
and Seas; its Animals, Vegetables, Minerals,
and famous Fishery for Pearls.

T H E

CUSTOMS of the INHABITANTS,
Their Religion, Government, and Manner of Living,
before their Conversion to the Christian Religion by
the missionary Jesuits.

T O G E T H E R W I T H

Accounts of the several Voyages and Attempts made for
settling California, and taking actual Surveys of that
Country, its Gulf, and Coast of the South-Sea.

I L L U S T R A T E D W I T H

Copper Plates, and an accurate Map of the Country and
the adjacent Seas.

Translated from the original Spanish of MIGUEL VENE-
GAS, a Mexican Jesuit, published at Madrid 1758.

I N T W O V O L U M E S .

V O L I I .

L O N D O N :

Printed for JAMES RIVINGTON and JAMES FLETCHER,
at the Oxford Theatre, in Pater-Noster-Row. 1759.

F861

204809

V. 52

1. 2. 3.

Reserve

2. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1.

C O N T E N T S

O F T H E

S E C O N D V O L U M E,

P A R T I I I.

S E C T. XIII.

NEW forces sent from his majesty to California; father Salva-Tierra dies in his way to Mexico; state of Affairs in that country. From page 1 — 20.

S E C T. XIV.

Progress of the missions under fathers Sistiaga and Tamaral; the mission La Purissima, founded; a vessel built in California, by the diligence of father Ugarte; father Bravo obtains another at Mexico, and founds the mission de la Paz. At the same time father Helen founds that of Guadalupe. p. 21---40.

S E C T. XV.

Father Guillen undertakes to survey the western coast, and father Ugarte that of the gulf of California, to the river Colorado; three

C O N T E N T S.

three harbours discovered on the coast of the
South-sea. p. 40—72.

S E C T. XVI.

The mission de Nuestro Senora de los Dolores
del Sur, founded by father Guillen, and
that of St. Jago de los Coras by father
Napoli. p. 72—89.

S E C T. XVII.

Foundation of the northern mission of San Ig-
nacio, by father Luando, and its progresses,
death of the fathers Piccolo and Ugarte, in-
surrections of the Pericues, and foundation
of the mission of St. Joseph at cape San
Lucas, by father Tamaral. p. 89—110.

S E C T. XVIII.

Survey of the islands of Dolores, by father
Taraval; account of others formed by the
channel of Santa Barbara, in the South-sea;
foundation of the mission of Santa Rosa by
that father; insurrection of the Coras, for the
want of a garrison. p. 110—123.

S E C T. XIX.

The Philippine galleon comes for the first time
to cape San Lucas; the ship's company are
refreshed,

C O N T E N T S.

refreshed, and the sick cured. The fathers Caranco and Tamaral suffer martyrdom by the hands of the Pericues; father Taraval escapes. Four missions destroyed. p. 123--145

S E C T. XX.

All the missions, from a mistrust of the northern Indians, retire to Loretto; a remarkable instance of the fidelity of the Yaquis; measures taken by the fathers for pacifying the southern Indians; misfortune which attended the Philippine galleon; the governor of Cinaloa goes to California; death of father Julian de Mayorga; the Pericues are quieted, and a new garrison settled at San Lucas. p. 145--161.

S E C T. XXI.

The southern mission happily restored; excellent measures taken by his majesty Philip V. for promoting the conquest; his present majesty Ferdinand VI. ratifies them in their full extent. p. 161--174.

S E C T. XXII.

Preparations at Mexico, in pursuance of the foregoing royal orders; endeavours for penetrating into the province of Maqui. Father Sedelmayer

C O N T E N T S.

Sedelmayer repairs to the rivers Gila and Colorado. The coast of California, as far as these rivers, surveyed; father Coursay's expedition against the Apates; last accounts of the mission of California, Sonora, and Pimeria, till the year 1752. p. 174---213.

P A R T IV.

I N T R O D U C T I O N.

A P P E N D I X I.

A short description of the outward coast of California, by Gomara. p. 225---227.

A P P E N D I X II.

Narrative of the voyage of captain Sebastian Vizcaino in the year 1602, for surveying the outward, or western coast of California on the South-sea. p. 227---308.

A P P E N D I X III.

Account of the voyage of father Fernando Coursay, missionary of California, performed for surveying the eastern coast of California to its extremity, the river Colorado, by order of father Christoval de Escobar and Llemas, provincial of New Spain in the year 1746. p. 308---353.

A P P E N D I X

C O N T E N T S.

A P P E N D I X I V.

A description of California, by captain Woods Rogers, an Englishman, and of his voyage to the South-sea in the year 1710. p. 353--361.

A P P E N D I X V.

Extract of some passages in the voyage of commodore Anson; with a vindication of the jesuits. p. 361—387.

g
w
w
vi
re
ne
to
an
cu
m

A
NATURAL and CIVIL
HISTORY
OF
CALIFORNIA.

PART III. SECT. XIII.

New forces sent from his majesty to
CALIFORNIA; father Salva-Tierra
dies in his way to Mexico; state of af-
fairs in that country.

THE year 1717 began in the midst of
the sollicitudes and cares mentioned in
the preceding volume. The indefati-
gable Salva-Tierra was now stooping beneath a
weight of years and disorders; the stone, with
which he had been long afflicted, became more
violent; but his zeal would not allow him to
remit his useful labours, except when he was
not able to stand, and even then he took care
to direct every particular with the greatest care
and attention. It was however too soon conspi-
cuous, that his labours drew near their period.

In the month of March father Nicholas Ta-
marral appointed for the proposed mission of La

VOL. II.

B

Purissima

Purissima came to San Dionysio or Loretto bay ; he brought letters with him from the provincial father Gaspan Koderó, informing him that on the 10th of August the preceding year, the new vice-roy Don Gaspar de Zuniga, Marquis de Valero, arrived at Mexico, and had brought with him the most positive and particular orders from the court relating to the reduction of California ; and that he himself was strongly inclined to put them in execution. In order to this, his excellency was desirous of conferring with the father ; and therefore he should without delay repair to Mexico ; and trusting in his immediate compliance he had sent father Tamaral, at whose return others should accompany him, even though the province should want subjects. Accordingly neither disease, pain, age, sollicitude, want, or danger, could hinder the brave Salva-Tierra from embarking on the 31st of the same month for Matanchel, accompanied by brother Jayme Bravo, who refused to leave him in his melancholy condition, while the care of every thing was committed to father Ugarte. They had an easy passage of nine days over the gulf ; but the motion of travelling by land to Tepique, so increased the tortures of the aged father, that he was not able to mount a horse ; and to stay at Tepique, neither his zeal for the govern-

government, nor the occasion of his journey would permit; so that there was a necessity of carrying him to Guadalaxara on the shoulders of Indians: which also was attended with extreme pain. Here his tortures encreased to such a degree, that he lay two months in the greatest agony. When perceiving that his last hour was now arrived, he called brother Jayme, gave him instructions and powers for managing at Mexico the concerns of the mission, and contentedly resigned his breath. All the city and even the province were extremely troubled with the account of his danger. They had for several years loved him as their father, and respected him as a man of exemplary life, and remarkably zealous for the conversion of the Indians; but one circumstance greatly affected persons of all ranks, namely the extraordinary grief of the Californians whom he brought with him.

The whole city assisted at his interment, every place resounded with his praise, and his remains were deposited in the chapel he had erected to our lady of Loretto.

Father Bravo, having digested the several papers repaired to Mexico, where he found the viceroy perfectly disposed to promote the good of the missions, and the reduction of California. The order for the purpose signed by his majesty Philip V. on the 29th of January 1716,

after recapitulating all the former till the last of the 26th of July 1708, concludes: "And as no account has been remitted to any council of the Indies of what has been executed pursuant to my last express order, nor of the present state of the conversion of the natives of California; and considering the great importance of encouraging and promoting religion there by all possible means, I have thought proper to communicate to you these affairs, that, being informed of them, you may, as I hereby enjoin you, carefully and vigorously apply yourself to facilitate and forward the execution of the warrants dated the 26th of July 1708, attending particularly to the advancement of the conquest, transmitting me an account of every particular that may happen in carrying this command into execution; but without altering in the least, that form of government which has hitherto subsisted in California, that after examining the reports you remit, proper measures be taken: for such is my pleasure." This order entirely proceeded from the strong desire of reducing California, entertained by the Abbé Julio Alberoni, then at the head of publick affairs; and whose comprehensive ideas not only imparted new life and vigour to the commerce and navigation of Spain in Europe, and the eastern coast of America; but also extended to the coasts
of

of the S. Sea, which at that time the enemies privateers openly insulted with impunity. This sagacious and vigilant minister, who was soon after promoted to the purple, having ordered all the affairs depending in the council of the Indies to be laid before him, found among them, buried in an oblivion of eight years, a plan of the conquest of California which had been already attempted. His vast genius immediately saw the advantageous consequences which must attend the success of this enterprise; and without delay procured further informations concerning it. At this juncture a man of great wealth in New Spain, made an offer to the king in council of advancing 80000 dollars, in consideration of his being made governor of California, and chief alcaldí of Acaponetia and Santipac. This was a strong temptation to a minister who was in want of money, and much more, when meditating the vast and expensive enterprises which then engrossed his thoughts. But Alberoni never acted without a system; nor was his attention limited to present exigencies. The petition therefore, when fully considered, appeared to have dangerous consequences, as the projector would probably indemnify himself afterwards by ruining every thing in his power; and therefore this small supply would draw after it the loss of many

provinces, and especially destroy California; wherein his majesty must either be at infinitely greater expences, or that province still remaining entirely independent of his crown. It was also suspected, that the projector would oppress to the utmost not only the Jesuits and Californian christians, but even the soldiers and mariners of California, together with the inhabitants and Indians on the opposite coast. And thus, for the insatiable avarice of one man, thousands would wretchedly perish, and a vast extent of country be lost to the crown. The king therefore returned him for answer, that he should first produce certificates from the bishops, who had the inspection over these countries, whether his proposal was detrimental or not to the good of those christian settlements: and if it appeared that it was not, it should be taken into consideration.

This offer turned Alberoni's thoughts to the north part of the South sea, where he formed very grand designs. Among several others was that of settling new colonies on the North American coasts of the South sea, and at the same time to extend the dominion of Spain on those immense and unknown countries north of Sonora, from the rivers Gila and Colorado, that they might find a market by sea for their products of these colonies, and receive in exchange

change other necessaries. He was also desirous that the commerce and subsistence both of these colonies and of the other new settlements in the inland provinces, should not depend entirely on the goods and commerce of New Spain and Europe: on the contrary his principal plan was to extend the trade and navigation of the Philippine islands; designing to make them the center and staple of all the commerce of China, and other parts of the East; as being very advantageously situated for it. From these islands a trade was to be carried on with both sides of North and South America; and New Spain was a sure channel for conveying all the merchandises of the East, to Old Spain, and other parts of Europe; the commerce of the latter with both Americas, and of these with the East, being so regulated, as not to break in upon, or diminish the necessary and due dependence of the West Indies with regard to Old Spain; but on the contrary greatly increase the advantage of both, by decreasing, if not utterly destroying, that disadvantageous commerce which has been long carried on between Europe and America, the greatest part of the goods being the property of other nations: the labour and danger only being the portion of Spain.

It would be foreign to our purpose, to expatiate on the measures projected, and partly put in execution, for recruiting the navy, restoring it to its ancient splendor, and erecting manufactures and trades of all kinds; for promoting plenty and commerce between the provinces; for recruiting the exhausted treasury without new impositions, or rather by easing the people; for abolishing abuses in the foreign customs, and settling them in an uniform manner, that ships might for the future go to the Indies from any parts of Spain, and return thither again without molestation; for rendering the voyage from one part to another more secure; for suppressing all illicit trade; for increasing the traffick between subjects and subjects to the general benefit and augmentation of the revenue, not by raising the prices and duties on account of the scarcity, but by multiplying small profits arising from the plenty and facility of acquiring them: for rousing old Spain from its lethargy, that instead of its trade in Europe, which is merely passive, it may be its own agent for concentrating the advantages of both Americas in itself, and by uniting stocks render it the chief proprietor of the commerce even in the East Indies, and all parts of the South sea: and lastly, for giving new spirit and vigour to the whole nation.

Let

Let it suffice to say that for carrying this plan into execution for the mutual advantage of both New and Old Spain, measures were to be taken for supplying both Americas with goods at a much cheaper rate, that the subjects there might reap the fruit of their labours; for asserting his majesty's dominion over the Atlantick and Pacifick oceans, and for dispersing those corsairs and privateers, who scandalously defy our power. This would render the Spanish nation the real proprietor of its own commerce in both seas, and thus, the nation would reap the profit of it: and the vast advantages of both Americas and the Philippine islands center in Old Spain; in the same manner the French, Dutch, and English reap the benefit of their settlements in the East Indies, and their colonies in America.

It is very easy for a person to entertain his imagination with such magnificent ideas; but the execution depends on many heads and hands; the first motives must be formed and regulated by the general system; but the execution is too often attended with insuperable difficulties. The minister knew by experience, that there was nothing too arduous for the magnanimity of his prince to undertake, provided it tended to the glory of his crown: and therefore, in order to venture upon the execution of those vast

vast projects as far as they related to California and the countries and seas contiguous to it, the new viceroy was ordered to encourage the Sonora missions, and proceed according to the above instructions relating to California: the minister likewise verbally recommended to him the settlement of colonies and garrisons on the south coasts, and the further discovery of others yet unknown.

Accordingly the viceroy, pursuant to such positive orders, conferred, soon after his arrival at Mexico, with the father provincial Gaspar Rodero, on the most proper means of carrying them into execution; and directed him and father, Alexandro Romano, agent for California, to attend at a general council of the ministers. Here the viceroy having ordered his instructions to be read, declared his intention of founding at least one Spanish colony on the western coast of California. This was approved of by all the ministers; but father Alexander being better acquainted with California, made a short speech, in which he observed, that the fathers had always this design at heart, as sufficiently appeared from their many expensive surveys and unsuccessful attempts; but that the enterprise was attended with more difficulties than they were aware of, no convenient harbour, with water, wood, and arable land near it, having yet been found

found all along the coast; and if it were possible to find a place with all these advantages, his majesty must for some years be at the expence of subsisting the colony; for the country was so very barren, as not to afford a subsistence for the missionaries few soldiers now there; much less that plenty and variety requisite for a colony. He then mentioned the difficulties relating to the shipping, the present deplorable situation of the fathers with only an old bark, and the famines, hardships, and shipwrecks to which they were exposed. This speech induced the viceroy and council to send for father Salva-Tierra, that, by his advice, who was of all men the best acquainted with the project under consideration, the most proper measures might be taken. But the death of that worthy man disconcerted this scheme, and rendered it necessary for them to consult Jayme Bravo. Accordingly the father provincial introduced him to the viceroy, who found him a person of greater abilities than he had at first expected. He explained to him all the difficulties that attended a settlement of this kind, and presented two papers to his excellency; one giving an account of the country and the inhabitants of California, the coast which had been discovered, and the foundation and present condition of the missions; the other, measures which
he

he thought most conducive for extending the conquest, and accomplishing his majesty's orders. The viceroy therefore ordered these papers to be referred to the great council which he immediately assembled.

On the 25th of September, all the schedules, with reports and orders relating to California, from that issued on the 26th of September 1703, down to the two memorials delivered in by brother Bravo, were read before the assembly. All the articles contained in the last, relating to the execution of his majesty's orders were immediately discussed: after which the solicitor delivered his opinion, which was confirmed by the votes of the whole assembly, and the following resolution was unanimously agreed to.

“ It is resolved, pursuant to his majesty's orders, that the missions of California be supplied with every thing necessary for the payment of twenty-five soldiers, with a captain, seamen, boys, and shipwrights, for a vessel of a construction suitable to the use she is intended for, and also a smaller for conveying provisions: and that if the allowance of thirteen thousand dollars be not sufficient to defray those expences, the deficiency be supplied from the treasury; and that the additional charge may not retard the execution, that all delay, as far as possible, is to be

be avoided, to prevent the total loss of all the labour taken by jesuits, without any considerable expence to the royal revenue, for this work; the sums expended having been raised by contributions, tho' they amounted to above five hundred thousand dollars: it being his majesty's pleasure expressed in repeated orders, that not only those missions be maintained, but as far as possible extended; likewise that all diligence be used for discovering some harbour where a fortification may be erected, and a garrison placed for the conveniency of the annual ship from the Philippine islands; where she may safely put in, victual, refresh her company, leave her sick men, and be enabled to continue her voyage to Acapulco, without any of the dangers now attending this voyage, both from the enemy, and the great numbers of men which die at the ship's first arrival on this coast. And for obtaining this important end, as soon as a proper vessel can be built, and manned with a proper number of soldiers and seamen, she shall sail to California, that an accurate survey of the coast may be made, according to the direction of the fathers, who, being persons acquainted with the country, coasts, and seas, the entire conduct and direction of this affair is to be committed to their discretion; it being found, that after an immense

menſe charge to this revenue, all the perſons employed, have been ſo far from ſucceeding, that this country, of ſo great importance, and ſo much deſired to be known, remained in the ſame darkneſs and obſcurity as at the beginning: and that by the charts, jointly with the memorials and opinions of the ſaid fathers, the pilot and the proper perſons, an harbour may be choſen, and preparatives made for building a fort and every other particular relating to the accompliſhment of his majeſty's order. And, as to the appointments of the miſſionaries in the miſſions hereafter to be founded, regard will be had to the great inconveniencies and hardships attending the diſcharge of their office in the country, and the difficulty of conveying proviſions, apparel, and other neceſſaries, eſpecially as it is to be done by ſhipping, in this caſe differing from thoſe whoſe miſſions lay up the country. But with regard to the ſalt pits, aſked for the ſanctuary of Loretto, (they being a regality belonging to his excellency) we leave it to his pleaſure, that he may beſtow this favour for a limited time, or for ever."

The firſt article which father Bravo aſked, was pay for fifty foldiers, and another garrifon, either at La Paz, or Cape San Lucas. This was alſo granted; as was likewise a petition
for

for a seminary for educating the children of California. The salt pits are those in the island of Carmen, near Loretto. Father Salva-Tierra had often made interest for them, but was disappointed; neither have they since been granted. Other articles requested by father Bravo, as a reward for capt. Don Estevan Rodrigues, the exemption of the two villages of Ahome, and Yaqui, from the Mita, and the works of his Indians were likewise referred to the viceroy. But the day following, the father met with a very unexpected mortification. The treasurer Mendoza, who had always zealously countenanced the concerns of the mission, and even in an affair quite foreign to government, and who in the council had been approved of, and supported the vote, afterwards recollected that, for fifty soldiers, building and manning vessels, discoveries of coasts and harbours, maintaining garrisons at La Paz, and the south coast, new missionaries, seminaries, and other articles included in the votes, the thirteen thousand dollars, allowed by the king, (tho' till then never paid) would be so far from sufficing, that there would be a necessity of tripling or quadrupling the sum. This filled him with apprehensions that the court of Madrid would highly disapprove of such profusion, and the chief blame would fall upon him. It is not at all

all strange, that this gentleman should be afraid of Madrid, as till the happy reign of Philip V. nothing was heard of from thence but difficulties, debts, deficiencies, and orders for the strictest savings in the royal revenue; the consequence of which was, that the nation in Europe and America, was like a body without a soul. The next day he communicated his thoughts and apprehensions to the viceroy, and prevailed on him to order that the vote, having not yet passed thro' all the forms should not be registered. He immediately sent for the fathers; and tho' these with the greatest solidity enlarged on the reasons, adduced in the council, the viceroy fluctuating betwixt the orders of their court, and the exaggerated apprehensions of the treasurer, he reduced the number of the soldiers from fifty to twenty-five; refused the settlement of a garrison of fifteen soldiers at La Paz or San Lucas, tho' evidently necessary; would not admit the seminary, tho' before he thought one not sufficient, and denied the salt pits. In short, his ardor for every particular seemed quite cooled. This did not discourage father Bravo from strenuously pushing the affair, but the remembrance of Madrid checked his resolution to remove the difficulty for settling the pay of twenty-five soldiers, and the seamen on the footing of those of Cinaloa, New Biscay,

Biscay, and the South sea ; but this amounting to a sum of near nineteen thousand dollars, he thought it too great ; and altered the establishment to that of the guard of the palace of Mexico, and the garrison of Vera Cruz, and the Leeward islands. Thus the sum was reduced to ten thousand dollars. This seemed too little to father Bravo, who, finding his representations of little consequence, required a certificate of all that had passed, in order to appeal to his majesty. This the viceroy was unwilling to give, tho' he allowed that the orders to him from his majesty and the minister, were very short and positive, that the enterprize should be attempted at any expence. At last, after several delays, the treasurer and viceroy flattering themselves with the hopes that, in case of complaint, they should excuse themselves from the absolute resolutions of the council, where every thing that had been asked was readily granted, the first vote was signed and registered ; but with these restrictions, that the soldiers were reduced to half the number, the seminary, the garrison at La Paz, and the other articles in it, totally omitted : but this vote was not added to the acts of the council, among which only were entered brigadier Jayme's memorials ; and three years after, together with all the papers relating to the council,

cil, were left in the house of a private person. Eighteen thousand two hundred and seventy-five dollars and four reals were allowed for the pay of the foldiers and sailors, being on the same footing with those of New Biscay, and the South sea. Three thousand and twenty-three dollars were allowed for discharging the debts left at the death of father Salva-Tierra. Four thousand dollars were issued out of the treasury as the purchase-money of a vessel for the service of California ; but after all this expence, she was lost the very next year in Matanchel harbour, through a fault in her keel. Every other particular which had been ordered, terminated only in the good inclination of the viceroy, who was entirely for reducing and peopling California, and making settlements along the coasts ; but was unwilling to advance the necessary sums for executing that advantageous project.

But the king and ministry of Spain were very far from that sordid parsimony as the council in America apprehended. At the same time, namely, towards the end of the year 1717, father Piccolo wrote a familiar letter to father Brassal Jua, then rector of the college of Guadiana, in which he gave him an account of his discoveries in the north of California, and his successful progress ; the good dispositions of the
the

the inhabitants of the south and opposite coast for receiving the faith, if they had instructors, and lastly of the poverty, danger, and melancholy condition in which they all lived for want of barks, provisions, clothing and stock. This letter came to the hands of Don Pedro Tapiz, bishop of Durango, to which diocese California belongs; and who was so extremely moved with this account, that he desired the original letter might be left with him, and he would transmit it to his majesty, together with a memorial from himself. Accordingly, on the 18th of February, 1718, he inclosed father Piccolo's letter in one which he wrote to his majesty, wherein, after a pathetick representation of the affairs of California, intermixed with political arguments, he begged the king to encourage these new christian settlements, and augment the missionaries, that they might convert such multitudes of people to the christian faith. These letters were received at Madrid in the year 1719, and his majesty ordered them to be laid before the supreme council of the Indies; and with their advice, supported by the influence of cardinal Alberoni, he signed, on the 19th of January 1719, a new schedule, directed to the viceroy, in which, after inserting what was given him at his departure for Mexico, "he again charged him in the strong-

est expressions to perform and execute what he had been ordered, as hitherto his majesty had received no advice concerning it ; and speedily send him an account of the progress made therein."

On receiving this schedule, the viceroy had the mortification to find, that the acts of the council had not been transmitted to court, and that no account could be given of the papers relating to it. At last, they were found in a private house, as I have before mentioned : and tho' it is believed, that the viceroy had in his letters given his majesty an account of the publick transactions ; yet it does not appear by the offices, that the acts of the council were sent to court.

In the same year 1719, cardinal Alberoni left Spain, and at the same time his vast projects relating to America, the Philippine islands, and the South sea, together with those concerning Europe, which are known to all the world, fell to the ground.

S E C T. XIV.

Progress of the missions under father Sistiaga and Tamaral. The mission La Purissima founded. A vessel built in CALIFORNIA, by the diligence of father Ugarte. Father Bravo, obtains another at Mexico; and founds the mission de la Paz. At the same time father Helen founds that of Guadalupe.

After father Jayme Bravo had dispatched the affairs of the mission at Mexico, and paid his compliments of thanks to the viceroy and other ministers, his first care was to purchase the provisions and goods so greatly wanted; after which he arrived together with father Sebastian de Sistiaga at Loretto, in July 1718, in the Peruvian vessel, purchased by the viceroy.

In autumn 1717, a most terrible hurricane arose, which extended all over California and its gulf, accompanied with such violent rains as swept every thing away before it. The church and father Ugarte's house were laid level with the ground, and he himself saved his life under a rock, where he stood exposed to all the severity of the weather for twenty-four hours. The channel for conveying the water away was choked up, the sluice at San Xavier

carried away, and the land which had been sown both there and at Mulege was utterly destroyed, and covered with stones. Such was the force of the blasts, that at Loretto, a Spanish boy, called Matheo, was taken up by one of its gyrations, and never seen more, tho' the strictest search was made after him. Several barks belonging to the divers, on the coast of California, were also lost; and two belonging to Compostella, in which four persons perished; but the rest saved themselves in two large bilanders, which happened to lie near them, and were strongly moored under the shelter of a rock. In these the unhappy persons were carried to Loretto, where father Ugarte received them with the most liberal affection, till they had an opportunity of returning to New Galicia in the viceroy's vessel; and she also was soon after lost. The fathers had seen many hurricanes and heavy rains here, but none equal to this for violence or continuance. If in former ages these hurricanes were frequent in California, it is not surprising that all its mould should have been swept away, its bare rocks alone remaining, and its plains and vallies covered with heaps of stones.

Now father Tamaral, with better hopes, went to the village of San Miguel, whither, as the first fruits of his mission, came two rancherias of Gentile Indians requesting to be baptized, which,

which he accordingly performed. After which, with extreme difficulty, he made his way through the Sierra mountains to the rancherias of Cadigomo, which some years before had been visited by father Piccolo. Here he was met by the rancherias of La Purissima Conception. He hoped at La Purissima to find greater conveniencies both for corn and pasture than at Cadigomo, where, tho' he afterwards made a sluice or ditch for collecting water, it proved lost labour, thro' the torrents and carelessness of the Indians. At La Purissima he found the soil washed away by the late rains; but at last, after the toils of some years, he built a church and a house; and had several fields of maize in different parts for himself and his Indians. Another work of great difficulty was to make a way practicable for beasts to the mission of Santa Rosalia, being the nearest, in order to procure provisions; the villages of San Miguel and San Xavier lay out of the way, besides the danger and cragginess of the road. He presided over this new mission several years, and as a proof of his zeal and fervour, it is sufficient to say, that under a very weak constitution and frequent illness, he extended it above 30 leagues in a mountainous, rocky country, and inhabited by above forty rancherias, which were continually shifting from place to place; thirty three of them he civilized and instructed;

and the number of souls baptized by him amounted to near two thousand. Thus he modelled those wretched savages into one of the most numerous and best governed missions in those parts of the world.

Animated by the good disposition of Madrid and Mexico, father Ugarte determined to attempt the execution of enterprizes which he alone was able to bring to an issue. He was very solicitous for an exact survey of both coasts of the gulf of California, and to determine beyond all doubt whether it was joined or not to the continent of New Spain; which many, notwithstanding father Kino's discoveries very much doubted; apprehending, that betwixt Loretto and the river Colorado, there might be some channel or streight, thro' which the gulf issued into the South sea, and had been the passage for those vessels which were said formerly to have sailed quite round California. He was no less desirous of reconnoitring by sea the south coast, in quest of an harbour for the Philippine ships; not only as such a design had been on foot from the very beginning of the undertaking, but as it was now strongly recommended by the superiors, in the name of the viceroy, as an article of his majesty's orders. For such expeditions, it was necessary to be provided with a large, strong, and secure vessel; but such could not be procured

cured in all those seas. The old San Xavier was not at all fit for the purpose; and that given by the viceroy was very little better. If they attempted to purchase another vessel on the coast of Acapulco, they were sure of being cheated as before; for the Peruvians are not very exact as to the strength of such vessels, knowing the voyage is on a sea which, except certain periodical gales, is truly pacifick. To build a new vessel on the coasts of New Spain, might be said to throw both men and money into the sea, on account of the former specimens of the ignorance, fraud, and wickedness of the builders and workmen there in the several barks called the San Fermen, San Joseph, and Rosaria.

The Philippine islands, tho' the distance of them would necessarily occasion a long delay, might have afforded a vessel sufficiently large, as at present they build there vessels of all kinds. But the system of the commerce of Spain and Mexico made the Philippine islands an asylum, or refuge, which was not then thought of, notwithstanding the lights afforded in the orders of king Philip * III. The only resource was to build a complete vessel, and in poor barren California, where there was neither planks, sails, rigging, tar, or any other necessaries.

* See this prince's schedule of the 19th of August 1706, part 2, sect. iv.

for such a work: they had neither builder, shipwright, sawyers, or other naval artificers; nor even so much as subsistence for such a number of men.

These difficulties appeared unsurmountable, especially as the mission, even with the new allowances, laboured under great difficulties, the garrison and the expences having increased more than in proportion; yet no other way was left for executing the king's orders, with which the advancement of religion was connected. Father Ugarte therefore undertook, and happily finished, this difficult task: he brought a builder and artificers to Loretto, with a design to fetch the timbers from the other shore, as he had done with regard to those for his churches. For none of the parts, hitherto discovered in California, afforded any of this kind. But being informed by the Indians, that 70 leagues north of Loretto there were large trees, he went in September 1719, with the builder, two soldiers, and some Indians to Mulege. From thence, in company with father Sistiago, he passed those craggy mountains which at present join to the mission of Guadalupe; and after inexpressible difficulties and toils, he found at length 30 leagues from Mulege a considerable number of guarivos; but standing in such bottoms and

sloughs, that the builder thought it impossible, considering the difficulty of the road, even to bring them to the sea shore. The father however made no answer to the builder, but returned to Loretto, where the whole enterprize, and particularly this journey, had been the jest of the people. The father was not however intimidated; he again returned to the mountains, and in four months not only felled the timber, but cleared a road of 30 leagues, and brought the planks to the shore of Santa Rosalia Mulege, by the oxen and mules belonging to the mission. Three artificers only of the other coast offering their service to fell the timber, all the other being christians of California, or Gentiles of the neighbouring rancherias; and the carriage of which was performed by the savages of the mountains, whom at the same time he took an opportunity of civilizing and instructing in the principles of virtue and religion. Thus, at length, under this father's conduct, a vessel was built, which, for beauty, largeness, strength, and contrivance was much superior, in the judgment of the American and Philippine artists, to any which had ever been seen on those coasts; and in so short a time, that the same father launched her in September, 1709, and called her the Triumph of the Cross. The building of this ship had exhausted the whole

whole remainder of the provisions and money of the mission, tho' the Indians always took proper care to receive their allowance. He even did not spare the presents sent to him from his friends at Mexico for his private use. Yet in examining the account, the cost of the vessel appeared to be less than if she had been built in New Spain.

Whilst this vessel, the only one till then of its kind, was building in California, the mission received another new vessel, and a new agent in their temporal concerns. The Peru bark, given by the viceroy having been lost in August 1719, and California being very much streightened by the ordinary and extraordinary expence of the new soldiers and artificers at Mulege, brother Jayme Bravo, as purveyor, or agent, went from the mission to the coast of Cinaloa, to procure goods and provisions. There he found letters from father Alexandro Romano, now provincial, in which, by order of the father Tamburini, the general, he was directed to come to Guadalaxara, and there to be ordained priest, that he might be qualified to be a missionary for California. The brother was greatly surprised at such an order, but there was no declining it; and going to Guadalaxara, he in three successive days, according to the privileges of
the

the society, was invested with the proper orders by Don Manuel de Membela, who received him with all the effusions of paternal affection. From hence, by order of the same provincial, he went to Mexico, to give an account of the mission. The greatest want at that time was shipping; for tho' the bilander was successfully completed, she was rather fit for making discoveries than for carrying goods and provisions. This induced him in a kind of petitionary memorial to apply to the marquis de Valero, as viceroy, who referred the case to the treasurer, as he did to the chamber of accounts; and the chamber to the council; and the discussion and decision of the affairs of California have ever been lodged in it. The council, on the 15th of March 1720, ordered to be delivered to father Jayme, a bark for Peru, which the viceroy had mentioned with the arms and stores he had desired. The bark was not at Acapulco, but Guatulco, and from whence she did not return till June. In the mean time, the marquis de Villa Puente, from his great sense of the necessity that the Guaycuros should be civilized and reduced, advanced the usual fund for erecting a new mission at La Paz, desiring at the same time that father Bravo would be the founder. The father the more readily accepted of the offer, as the enterprise

in

in all appearance was not without imminent danger; and in July he set sail for Acapulco, in his new bark, having on board clothing, utensils, &c. for the garrison and mission. He touched at Matanchel for taking in provisions, and in August, to the great joy of all, he entered the bay of San Dionysio, where he found the new Californian bilander.

The same year, 1720, was remarkable for the foundation of two new missions, one south, and the other north, of Loretto, by which, besides securing the conquest, christianity became considerably promoted. The first and the most necessary was that in La Paz bay, 80 leagues from Loretto, among the Guaycuros, tho' this is not the proper name of the people of those countries, but Periques. The name of Guaycuros was given them in some former expeditions, when the soldiers heard the Indians often call to one another Guaxoro, Guaxoro, which, in their language, signifies friend; and from that time they were called Guaxoros, and since Guaycuros. Ever since the expedition of admiral Otondo, these Indians have been very suspicious of the Spaniards, and at continual war with the divers, who visit their coasts. Generally both sides were sufferers, several being killed and taken prisoners in these rencounters; and it was to be feared, that some time

or

or other, the Guaycuros would raise a rebellion, even among the converted nations. This induced father Salva-Tierra to pay them that unsuccessful visit, which we have already related. It was necessary to enter the country, both by sea and land, at the same time; by land, in order to open a way for an intercourse with Loretto, and to civilize the intermediate nations; and by sea, for the more ready conveyance of men, provisions, and other necessities in so dangerous an enterprize. The expedition by land was committed to father Clemente Guillen for his mission of San Juan Baptista Ligui; that of the sea, father Ugarte took upon himself, and made the first trial of the Californian bilander, called the Triumph of the Cross. He embarked with father Bravo, who was extremely desirous of entering on his mission on the 1st of November 1721; and being happily arrived at La Paz, the people were landed with all the care and regularity necessary in an enemy's country. But it soon appeared, that the danger was not so great as had been imagined, for tho' some Guaycuros at a distance appeared in arms, as soon as they saw the fathers, who advanced towards them with only an Indian interpreter, they sat themselves down on the ground, as a sign of their friendly dispositions. The fathers with many affectionate gestures

gestures distributed among them some pieces of sackcloth, knives, razors, and other utensils, and also some toys; which they received with great joy as highly valuing them, and by means of the Indians they were given to understand, that the fathers came to be their friends and to bring about a reconciliation between them, and the inhabitants of the islands of San Joseph, and Spiritu Santo, and other neighbouring people, who were inveterate enemies to the Guaycuros, and had committed several massacres on them. They expressed a great deal of joy; but for several days were something shy of the soldiers. At length they gradually came even from distant rancherias, being principally encouraged by the three prisoners left by father Salva-Tierra, who had given them a full account of their kind entertainment at Loretto; which, with the singular talent of father Urgarte to procure respect, and even the love of the savages, gave so happy a turn to affairs, that arbours and huts were erected for all the people, and a piece of ground was cleared for the church and a village. The provisions and beasts were brought ashore from the bilander, and to the great surprize and delight of the Guaycuros, the new mission was founded.

But what occasioned no little disquietude, was, that no account came of father Guillen's company.

company. He had undertaken the journey with some soldiers and Indians ; but such were the difficulties occasioned by the mountains, woods, and bogs, that they travelled above 100 leagues before they came in sight of the bay ; where they saw the bilander, which they saluted with their musquetry. Boats were immediately sent to bring them to the huts, where they landed with reciprocal joy, and without meeting with any opposition, or even signs of apprehension in the Guaycuros. Father Ugarte continued three months at La Paz, and gained in a surprising degree the affection of these savages. He also negotiated a peace between them and the islanders, whom, by the irresistible sweetness of his temper, he persuaded to land upon the continent, where both parties shewed all the marks of a sincere reconciliation. They were also very urgent with him to deliver them from the tyranny of the divers. Accordingly he left father Bravo, and some soldiers for their security ; and toward the end of January 1721, embarked for Loretto, and the Ligui returned by the new roads made thro' these inhospitable deserts ; father Bravo only remaining with some soldiers. The father here, as in every new mission, first applied himself to learn the language ; after which he built a church, parsonage, and huts, and applied him-

self with the greatest assiduity to conciliate their affections, civilize, instruct, assist, and relieve them in every thing within his power. These true christian offices he continued till the year 1728, when he returned to Loretto to assist father Piccolo, who, besides his advanced age, was in a bad state of health. In these six years he baptized above six hundred children and adults; increased the mission to eight hundred adults, whom he assembled in three villages, Nuestra Sennora del Pilar de la Paz, Todos Santos, and Angel de la Guarda. He prevailed on several savages to live in friendship; and discovered some tracts 20 leagues from La Paz, proper for planting maize, which he accordingly caused to be cultivated.

During the stay of the three fathers at La Paz, the north mission, under the patronage of Nuestra Sennora de Guadalupe was founded. Father Ugarte, while he continued amongst the mountains, felling timber for the bilander, had inspired all the Cochimies of those parts with such a love for christianity, that messengers were sent daily to him with requests that he would again visit them. The father readily complied, and was accompanied by father Everard Helen, a new missionary, who had been sent to California in April 1719. On his re-imbarking for La Paz, he left directions for

for commencing that foundation ; and soon after sent father Helen thither, who had already learned something of the language, under the disagreeable instruction of an Indian. He was accompanied by the captain and some soldiers ; and on the 26th of December 1720, arrived at Huasinapi, 60 league north of Loretto.

This country lies in 27 deg. N. latitude in the centre of the Sierra, 27 leagues N. W. of San Ignacio, and 30 from Concepcion ; the climate cold and unhealthy. Hither the Indians repaired from all the rancherias of the country, expressing the greatest satisfaction and joy that the father was come to live among them. Immediately a church was begun, and dedicated to Nuestra Sennora de Guadalupe, a house for the father, and likewise cottages and huts for the Indians ; and what was very extraordinary, the captain and soldiers, laying aside their usual disgust and sloth, readily assisted in all these works. In the midst of this success, he also received several messages, desiring he would visit the most distant rancherias, to instruct the sick and aged, who were unable to come to the mission.

In the mean time the captain and his men diligently forwarded the little buildings of the mission ; and at the end of six weeks, every

thing being in a good condition, the captain departed, leaving four soldiers as guards, which, from the distance of the country, and the little reliance that can be placed on the Indians, he thought the more necessary. The fervour of the Indians continued in its full force, so that father Helen was enabled to celebrate the first baptism of adults on Easter-eve 1721. This awakened impatient desires in the other distant rancherias, which were very urgent for baptism: but the father gave them to understand, that this was not to be expected till they were instructed to his satisfaction, and brought to him the little pieces of wood, hair, cloaks, deers feet, a kind of periwigs, and other trumpery used in their pretiges and impostures, as they had done who were baptized. This was a difficult point to gain, the more artful among them practising these tricks to inspire others with veneration, and draw from them every thing they wanted. The father, however, did not find among them any formal idolatry, or real forcery, or that they had any compact with evil spirits or any thing of that nature. But on the contrary, was convinced, from repeated instances, that those called forcerers, were mere cheats by profession, who pretended to be invested with a secret power from heaven, for doing good or harm; and that this trade was
gene-

generally followed by persons advanced in years, in order, by these delusions, to acquire a plentiful and easy subsistence, when they were no longer able to seek it among the mountains and forests. They also set up for physicians and to undertake to teach children useful and astonishing mysteries; but the whole was entirely founded on falshood and deceit; and their intention nothing more than to subsist by the labours of others. * This was however the greatest impediment to the propagation of christian religion. And therefore father H. ben. in imitation of the other missionaries, insisted on their bringing to him all the instruments of their superstition, and this the Indians at last complied with, and a great quantity of them being brought from all the rancherias, the father publicly burnt them.

The following years 1722, and 1723, were very calamitous to all California, and particularly to the new mission of Guadalupe. In the year 1722, the whole peninsula was invaded by such multitudes of locusts, that sometimes like thick clouds they intercepted the rays of the sun in their flight. The pitahayas and other fruits, on which the Indians chiefly subsist, were consumed by these insects, and had not the fathers distributed

* See part. I. sect. VII.

maize at the missions, great numbers of the Indians must absolutely have perished. But as there was not a sufficiency to support all of them, especially in Guadalupe, the Indians endeavoured to destroy the insects in order to prevent the same plague the ensuing year, and use them for food in their present distress. But the consequence of feeding on these creatures, was a general epidemia accompanied with malignant ulcers, which carried off great numbers. It is impossible to express the fatigue of father Helen on this occasion, for the relief of his Californian children. He was continually going from one rancheria to another, among those craggy mountains, in the several capacities of physician, confessor, priest, nurse, and father. The height of such a complication of distresses pierced his heart: but much more when he heard of the monstrous inhumanity of some rancherias, where, when any one was seized with the distemper, and had any food remaining, they buried him alive, or covered him with boughs, and so left him to perish.

Scarce was this epidemia over, when in the following year 1723, a dysentery raged with still greater havock. The father continued during this second visitation, the same devout and charitable offices with so little regard to his own health, that he contracted a dangerous hernia, and

and an incessant defluxion of the eyes, attended with such extreme pain, that he was obliged to retire to Loreto for some months, another father being sent to supply his place. But as soon as he was able he returned to his mission, where he was received with all the marks of esteem and veneration by his afflicted Indians, who had been witnesses of his constant attendance on 228 adult christians of several rancherias who died at that time: besides a great number who, under God, entirely owed their lives to his assistance. The father availed himself of this love of the grateful Californians for promoting the christian religion, so that father Juan de Gandulain in his visitation in the year 1726, found no less than 32 rancherias converted; containing 1707 christians of all ages. Some of these were incorporated into the mission of Santa Rosalia Mulege; and others to that of San Ignacio since founded, as more conveniently situated for their benefit. Twenty rancherias dispersed among the mountains as the conveniency of water would admit, remained to the care of the mission of Guadalupe. These the father gathered together in five villages, each with a chapel; and here the Indians live in the most pleasing order and devotion, according to the general method already described. The sowing of any grain has been found impracticable all

over the Sierra. But the father had procured some cattle which he distributed among them; and these, with the maize given them, made a great part of their subsistence. They have besides their native fruits and vegetables, which they go in search of in small bodies. As nature must necessarily in process of time sink under violent and continual labours, so father Helen's former disorder returned upon him, complicated with others: ye, in this melancholy condition, he was for dying among his Indians. But his superiors consulting his relief more than he himself did, ordered him to a more easy function in New Spain. And thus at the end of the year 1735, to their reciprocal grief, he left his Guadalupe Indians.

S E C T. XV.

Father Guillen undertakes to survey the western coast; and father Ugarte that of the gulf of CALIFORNIA to the river Colorado: three harbours discovered on the coast of the South sea.

The long desire of finding, on the western coast of California, a convenient harbour for the Philippine ships was revived by the strict injunction of his excellency the marquis de Valero
the

the viceroy, who, pursuant to the orders sent him from Madrid, was concerting measures for establishing colonies and garrisons on the coast. In order to accomplish this design, three operations were more particularly necessary. The first was to take a punctual survey by sea of the whole south coast from cape San Lucas northward, as before had been done in the preceding century by captain Viscaino. But this was now impossible to be executed by the jesuits, though father Ugarte was confident of success; for if, with many and large ships well manned and provided with necessaries, and the treasury open to answer any expence, that officer's voyage was attended with such danger, delays, and disappointments, how should the Californian mission of itself attempt such an enterprise with only its vessels, stock of provisions, and people, all which were far from being sufficient for taking a survey adequate to the purpose? The second operation was to go in quest of such an harbour by land. This had been attempted several times at a great expence and to no purpose: for after carefully viewing by land, several parts of the opposite coasts, no harbour sufficient to answer the intencion could be found; nor was the land fit for making such settlement, neither fresh water, wood, pastures, nor arable lands being known on the whole coast:

and

and there was little hopes of meeting with a more favourable country, as the coast did not extend itself farther to the northward than some of the missions already established. However, to remove all complaint of a want of care and diligence, father Clemente Guillen was charged to make a new attempt. The third operation relative to the same design of both the northern coasts, was to take a survey of the gulf of California: and to ascertain whether California was joined to the continent of New Spain as father Kino affirmed; or whether, on the contrary, it was an island; and that the gulf issued through some unknown passage into the South sea, either on this or the other side of the mouth of the river Colorado, according to the opinion that then prevailed in Mexico; where some did not scruple to treat the discoveries of father Kino as chimeras, notwithstanding the applause they met with in Europe. If California was connected with the continent, the noble plans of the fathers Kino and Salva-Tierra, for extending their respective missions northward, remain in full force, though at that time unsuccessful: Kino's plan related to those of Pimeria, and Salva-Tierra's to those of California: and these were to be extended till they met on the banks of the Colorado in 33 or 34 degrees latitude. And from thence with united
endca-

endeavours, and reciprocal assistance, as succours might be then easily conveyed to them by land, their respective territories were to be continually enlarged thro' countries, which from information and appearances had so good a soil as to make ample returns for any culture, till they reached the coast of the famous Puerto de Monte Rey, and Cape Mendozino in 37 and 40 degrees, being the most proper situation for a port for the Philippine ships. This survey of the gulf, being an enterprize of the greatest difficulty and danger, father Ugarte undertook; and whilst he was making the necessary dispositions for it, he desired father Guillen to execute the expedition with which he was charged.

It was known by the narrative of captain Viscaino, that in the latitude of 24 or 25 degrees, he had discovered in the South coast a spacious bay, where ships might be secure from the violence of the winds and sea, and had called it La Magdalena. Hither, as to a place already discovered by sea, and less difficult to be surveyed by land, father Clemente Guillen directed his course in the year 1719, accompanied by captain don Estevan Rodrigues Lorenzo, a party of soldiers, and three bodies of Californians armed in their manner. They travelled twenty five days amidst all the hardships

ships and fatigues naturally to be expected in such a craggy and barren country : and the Indians every where taking the alarm at seeing such a number of strange people in their country, rendered it necessary to observe the greatest order and circumspection in the march. At last they came to Magdalena bay, which lies in the district of the mission of St. Luis Gonzaga since founded. It was every where sheltered from the winds by lofty mountains, and about half a league in breadth, running up the country towards cape San Lucas. Near this arm they discovered a rancheria of Indians, with whom, by means of little presents, they entered into terms of peace and amity. On enquiring of the Indians after water, they were informed, and their own searches confirmed their report, that the only fresh water thereabouts was in a well dug in the sand, and which the Indians made use of. They added that a neighbouring island called Santa Rosa which they frequently visited, afforded a sufficiency of water : but they were without any means of crossing the channel to it; neither did they find in the bay those azure shells, or appearance of the rich pearl beds with which this coast was said to abound. It being known that the bay had two entrances, the captain sent some of his men to reconnoitre that on the south side, and by

by following the course of a brook observe whether the other arm of the bay, which forms the harbour called del Marques, afforded a watering place: In this survey they observed at a distance the second mouth or arm; but found that the brook long before its joining the sea, ran thro' some ponds of brackish water, so that there was no possibility for the ships to water here. This discovery induced them to attempt a survey of the whole tract: but in some parts the inaccessible rocks, and in others impassable marshes obliged them to make a circuit to the rancheria called San Benito de Aruy, four leagues from the sea, where the Indians gave them the same discouraging account of the want of water on the coast. Here all the people met, and father Guillen used his utmost endeavours for inducing them to undertake a survey of the remaining part of the coast, or at least as far as possible towards the south. But the captain and soldiers were not to be prevailed upon: and the Indians after such discouraging circumstances insisted on returning to Loretto. Thus father Guillen was obliged to renounce his scheme, and prepare for a return, taking with him for guides some Indians of that coast with whom he had contracted a friendship; and by their direction avoided so many circuits and difficult passes, that in fifteen days they reach-

ed

ed Loretto, after travelling about seventy leagues.

The enterprize which father Ugarte had taken on himself proved more fortunate, tho' the fatigues and dangers were incomparably greater. On the 15th of May 1721, he sailed from the bay of San Dionysio de Loretto in the bilander built here, and called the Triumph of the Cross, carrying with him a boat also built here, and called the Santa Barbara, six feet broad, eleven in the keel, and without a deck: the use of it was to sound and survey those parts the bilander could not approach. On board the bilander were twenty persons, six of whom were Europeans; and of these two had passed the streights of Magellan; another, besides being acquainted with the Atlantick ocean, had made a voyage to the Philippine islands, and been carried prisoner to Batavia, when the Philippine ship was taken off cape San Lucas, and another had made several voyages to Newfoundland: the rest were Indians of the country. The pilot called Guilermo Estrafort was a man of learning and experience: in the pinnace or boat were eight persons, two Chinese or Philipines, which, in the common language of New Spain, is synonymous, a Yuaqui Indian and five Californians; making in all twenty eight persons. The stock of provisions which they took

took on board was but very small for so uncertain a voyage, expecting agreeable to a promise made the year before by a missionary of Pimeria, to meet with a plentiful supply on the opposite coast of the Seris. They sailed up the gulf with a fair wind to Conception bay and the river Mulege, where father Ugarte visited the mission of Santa Rosalia and its missionary father Sistiaga. Thence they proceeded to take draughts of the coast of California as far as the neighbourhood of the islands of Sal-si-puedas: and then across the gulf to the harbour of Santa Sabina, and the bay of San Juan Baptista, both lying near those islands on the coast of the Tepoquis and Seris. They reached the harbour in five days: but on landing met with no Indian on the shore; tho' before they came from the ship, they saw an Indian, who, after fixing a cross in the sand, retired: our men immediately made up to the cross, approaching it with all the gestures of reverence. At this the Indian gave a shout, and immediately his companions, who lay concealed, and had likewise observed that the bilander had a cross on her bowsprit, made their appearance with all the signs of peace and friendship. Father Salva-Tierra had informed them of these signs, and recommended to them a hospitable behaviour towards the companies of all such ships as

1

carried

carried a cross, it being a sure sign that they belonged to the fathers of California.

The Indians were so impatient of seeing the father, that instead of waiting till he came ashore, several of them threw themselves into the sea and swam on board the ship, embraced his feet, kissed his hands and face, with other tokens of rapture and affection. The father, who was not wanting in suitable returns, entertained them, as he did those on the land. Two of them he charged with a letter to the father missionary of San Ignacio, who had made an offer of provisions; and these he before had rewarded with a canvass frock and some toys. Immediately all the empty casks were carried ashore for taking in water: and the sight of them seemed to raise a dispute among the Indians. Soon after they all went away intimating by signs that they would return the next day. Our men were not without apprehensions: and it growing late, for their greater security they returned on board; early the next day the Indians appeared in troops, and all with water vessels; the men each with two in nets hanging from a pole across their shoulders, and the women with one. This kindness the father returned, and they earnestly requested him to visit the Indians in the neighbouring islands as being their kinsmen. He complied with their desires, and that very evening

evening setting out with two Indians of the coast, they found themselves very early in the morning in a narrow channel, which they imagined to run betwixt the island and the continent, and were therefore for examining it. In order to which the canoe and the pinnace went further up, but soon found themselves in a place from whence they could hardly return. The channel, besides being narrow and crooked, was so full of shoals, that tho' the pilot went before in the boat as a guide, the bilander stuck, and was in danger of being lost: but was at last got off with great difficulty. Another accident which increased their concern was, the canoe and pinnace being carried away by the current to such a distance as not to be seen. The bilander was now under a necessity of going further up the channel, notwithstanding the many dangers visible on every side.

At last after three days of continual danger, they reached the mouth of the channel, where they found the boat and pinnace: but instead of running into the gulf, as they had imagined, it opened into a large and spacious bay, whence having a clear view of the island they were going to, they steered for it, without any difficulty or danger. The pinnace led, and at about the distance of a musket-shot, observed that the people on it were armed in their manner

with bows and arrows, and a kind of helmet of feathers, making the shores ring with their shouts, intending to intimidate the people in the pinnace: but the Indians, their countrymen, having swam ashore and informed them that the father was come in that ship to visit them, laid down their arms, received our people with all the marks of pleasure, and directed them to the harbour where they found both good water and a safe anchoring-place. Accordingly the bilander went thither and came to an anchor: but father Ugarte was seized with such violent pains from his waist downwards, that he found it impossible to go ashore. This distemper he had contracted in the harbour of the Seris, where he was thoroughly wet by the sea at landing, but laboured as much as any of the sailors in taking in water. The islanders seeing that the father did not come ashore, made thirteen balsillas or small floats on which fifty Indians went on board the bilander, requesting him that he would come to their island, where they had already prepared a house for his reception: at this the father, tho' every motion put him to extreme torture, gave directions for helping him into the boat, and when he came on shore, was carried by the seamen and Californians, the islanders standing to receive him in two rows; one of women and the other

of

of men. When he was seated in his house, which was made of boughs of trees and had two doors, the islanders came in one by one, without the least tumult; first the men and then the women. They entered by one door, and as they passed along, bowed their heads, that the father might lay his hand upon them: which he did with great affection; after which they retired by the other, and all was performed in surprising order. This transitory visit was the whole ceremony, after which the islanders gathered about the father, who endeavoured to support himself as well as possible under his excruciating pains, that he might receive them with all possible affability. He recommended to them to go to the mission del Populo, about two or three days journey from the neighbouring coast, and bring with them to their island an Indian Temachtian or teacher to instruct them. The time he stayed here was but short, being obliged to return to the coast for a supply of provisions. Accordingly he re-embarked, and continued his voyage to the mouth of the little river Caborca.

In his farther survey of the coast the only convenient place he met with was a small and open bay, where they anchored. From thence the pinnace was sent to reconnoitre the coast farther to the northward, and observe the signs of

Pimeria along it, which were some sand-banks beyond Costa Brava; three men were also sent to survey it by land. These returned in a day or two, reporting that the coast all along was without any bay; and all that they had discovered remarkable, was a pit of foul water, a path, and the tracks of a mule. On this information the father immediately dispatched two seamen, who, following the track, on the third day came to the mission of Concepcion la Caborca, where they found father Luis Gallardi, who had been lately sent thither. They delivered him father Ugarte's letters for himself and the father missionary of San Ignacio, desiring the latter to furnish the provisions he had offered the preceding year. As he had already received the former letter sent by the Seris, he immediately set out with what provisions and necessaries he could get together, being indeed but a small quantity, both messages coming at a time, when he was unprovided: for tho' father Ugarte had informed him, how acceptable his offer was and likewise specified the time of his expedition; yet these letters the father never received, so that he concluded his voyage would not take place that year. He also collected what he could at Caborca for the assistance of the bilander, and went to the shore, where father Ugarte waited the return of his messen-

messengers. But his pains still raged in all their violence, and for relief he was obliged to continue on his knees, this being the only posture in which he found any ease. It was now twelve days since his pains had hindered him from going ashore; tho' this was partly owing to the roughness of the sea, for after he was twice put into the canoe, they were not able to land him. However, on advice, that the father missionary of San Ignacio was coming, he was with no small danger as well as labour carried ashore, whence he went a league and a half to meet him; and found himself much easier by this exercise.

The father was extremely concerned for the slender supply he brought, and under this exigency measures were taken for purchasing provisions among the nearest habitations of the Pima Indians, partly on credit, and partly by the things brought on board the bilander: measures were also now taken for watering, which, notwithstanding the distance, was done in a short time by the contrivance of father Ugarte, who placed the people at certain distances; and thus the vessels were carried from one to the other. In the mean time the bilander was in continual danger from the great agitation of the sea; one of her cables was already broke, and the bowsprit, tho' of maria, a very strong

kind of wood, was carried away by a wave, but the greatest part of it was thrown into the bilander by the motion of the sea. The day following, the weather proving fair, the bowsprit was fixed as well as possible, and the vessels of water taken on board. However the ship's company were under great dejection; the cross, placed on the bowsprit, being lost: but was afterwards recovered by an Indian, and again fixed at the end of the bowsprit.

During these transactions, the people of the bilander saw at a distance a Californian young man, who went in the pinnace to take a survey of the coast: they had all, for some time, concluded, that the whole company had perished either by the waves or famine, as they had only a week's provision aboard; and some of the ship's company had ranged the coast to a great distance north and south, without being able to acquire any account of them. The Californian was followed by three of his companions, who related that after great fatigues and dangers from the boisterous waves, they put into a large shallow bay, where at night they anchored in two fathom water: but in the morning found the boat quite dry, the sea having ebbed away above two leagues: so that from the place where they were, they could not discern the water; and part of her keel was broken off.

In

In this situation four of them left the pinnacle to search for water; and seeing nothing but death before them in that desert country, the provisions in the pinnacle being nearly spent, they determined not to return, but keep as near the shore as possible, till they reached Yagui, in case it was not their good fortune to meet with the bilander before. On this advice water and provisions were immediately dispatched to the place; and the men in the pinnacle, who at the return of the flood had with great difficulty brought her into a creek, being revived by this supply, repaired the keel, and putting to sea, joined the bilander within four days. On the second of July, they all left this dangerous situation, intending to abandon these barren coasts, which, after all the exact observations in the pinnacle, afforded neither watering place, nor safe harbour; for, with regard to the bays, which were said to be marks of Pimeria, they were certainly formed by the impetuosity of the tides.

Accordingly they steered towards the coast of California, and in three days crossed the gulf, the breadth of which in those parts, does not exceed forty leagues, and came to an anchor, without entering the harbour, and sent the pinnacle ashore: but at the sight of the boat the Indians came down to the shore armed, and

having drawn a line on the strand made threatening signs to those who were coming ashore, if they offered to set a foot beyond it. But our people by signs and little presents changed their disposition, so that they came up to them in a friendly manner, and carried them to the rancheria or watering place: and from thence to another still larger, and at no great distance. With these recommendations from one to another, our people went nine leagues along the shore, where they found five watering places, and at each a rancheria; all the inhabitants of which received our people with candour and frankness. The bilander likewise continued her voyage in search of an harbour or bay; and after weathering a point of land which projected a considerable distance into the sea, she came into a large bay, where she anchored, the shore sheltering her from the south east wind, which at that time prevailed. But here they met with a circumstance more formidable than the wind itself, namely the rapidity of the currents, which prevented the vessel from riding with her head to the wind, and caused her to roll as if in a violent storm. Hereupon, whilst the pinnace went nearer the land in search of an harbour, Strafort the pilot determined to go ashore in the boat, in order to find an anchoring place farther up the bay: the boat was soon out of sight,

sight, and did not appear again till the next day, when she came along side, but in so shattered a condition, that it was with the utmost difficulty the people were taken on board.

The pilot reported, that having left the boat a day on the sand, he and his companions went up to the rancheria, where the Indians received them with all the signs of friendship; and that he distributed amongst them several toys; but amidst these reciprocations of good will, the tide returned, not gradually as usual, but with dreadful roarings; and on a sudden rose above three fathom. The boat was in an instant thrown among the rocks, and in a short time split into two separate pieces from head to stern. The Indians came up to their assistance, and by signs expressed their concern: and one of them in particular, gave them to understand, that in the neighbourhood there was wood of the same kind for building another. But this in their situation was impracticable; the only resource was to fasten the two pieces with nails taken out of the oars; with the sounding line and painter, they made oakum for caulking the seams, while clay supplied the place of pitch and tar. This took them up great part of the night, the Indians assisting them with lights, which were perceived from the bilander; and the next day at the return of the flood,

flood, they put to sea, keeping near the strand, that on any emergency they might get on shore. One of them was continually employed in throwing out the water; yet when they were near the bilander, it gained so fast upon them, that they gave themselves over for lost. Soon after the pinnacle returned, without having met with any harbour in the distance of twenty leagues. They had also been in great distress for want of water, but on advancing towards the shore, they saw several Indians, and by signs informed them of their distress; and the Indians by others, that they understood them; and accordingly dispatched two women for water. When the crew saw them returning with it, they came ashore without any apprehension, and took what they judged would suffice them till they reached the bilander, where every one was impatiently expecting the issue of their survey. On this report the bilander stood again to the northward; and after some days sailing, the colour of the water was perceived to alter, being sometimes of an ash-colour, and sometimes black; but generally reddish. This last appearance gave them to understand that they were not far from the river Colorado or red river; so that to avoid the shoals, they stood away to the coast of Pimeria, the pinnacle continually sounding a-head. In the middle

the strand, at on shore. employed in they were pon them, oft. Soon having met of twenty eat distress g towards s, and by and the In- od them; omen for returning t any ap- ged would bilander, ecting the the bilan- and after water was an ashco- ly reddish. nderstand Colorado als, they the pin- the mid- die of the gulf, the water was more turbid; and near the coast the depth of it was found in some places to be seven, eight, ten fathoms and more, always varying and without any contiguous channel. They now came to an anchor near the issue of the river on the Pimeria side, where they observed two of its mouths, which ejected into the sea grass, leaves, weeds, trunks of trees, burnt logs, the timbers of cottages and the like. When the inundations ceased, the ship's company were for going up the river on discoveries; but father Ugarte opposed this as on the two preceding nights the weather had been very tempestuous with thunders and lightnings and violent rains, which had occasioned the two inundations they had observed in the river; and that as the aspect of the sky continued still threatening, another flood was to be apprehended; and should this happen when they were in the river, they must inevitably be lost. Besides, father Ugarte and several others were very ill. They therefore crossed the mouth of the Colorado at a convenient distance, and anchored in four fathom water, being continually afraid of running on the sands.

On comparing this account with the survey, taken by father Fernando Consag in 1746, it appears that of the two channels separated by an island,

island, and through which the Colorado issues into the sea, father Ugarte only passed that on the east of the island, or the Pimeria side; and that when at anchor betwixt them, he saw at a distance the other on the west. From the same station father Ugarte had a clear and distinct view of the Cape of California, joining to the neighbouring mountains, and separated from the coast of Pimeria only by the river. If he did not go ashore at this point of land in order to a farther investigation, it must be imputed partly to his indisposition, and the illness of his ship's company; and partly to what he had observed of the flood and ebb. In those parts the tide shifts every six hours; the flood with a frightful impetuosity rises from three to seven fathoms, overflowing the flat country for some leagues; and the ebb necessarily returns with the same dangerous violence: and the bilander was without any secure anchoring place, nor was there an harbour at hand. He found in those waters the same noxious quality, which has since been confirmed by father Confag, namely, that they raise blisters and cause very sharp pains, especially in the more sensible parts; and which are not healed for some months. However the pilot who went on shore in the pinnace at several parts in order to make a complete drawing of it for his chart,

.was

F
rado issues
ted that on
neria side;
them, he
est. From
a clear and
nia, joining
d separated
the river.
nt of land
it must be
and the il-
tly to what
. In those
the flood
from three
at country
essarily re-
e: and the
anchoring
hand. He
us quality,
ther Con-
and cause
re sensible
for some
t on shore
order to
his chart,
was

C A L I F O R N I A. 61

was equally convinced that this cape was the extremity of the gulf of California, and that the waters beyond it were those of the river Colorado. By the sounding there appeared no signs of a channel which must have been large and deep: but four or five fathom was the greatest depth. The bottom is of a slimy viscid clay sticking to the anchor. There is no appearance of a channel as far as the eye can reach; which, in a northern direction, every where sees the land. The dangerous and extraordinary tides in those parts, as on both coasts, are a farther proof that the gulf is confined there: for had it any discharge or outlet towards the South sea, its waters would not rise with such rapidity, or to such a height, if they were not contracted at the extremity of their course, and at the end of the streight checked by those of the river Colorado. In fine a council of the mariners was held, in which it was resolved, that it was impossible for the bilander to continue in such a critical station without any safe harbour, in bad weather; that the pinnace being without a deck was in danger by the fury of the tides and the tempests; and that it would be rather rashness than courage to proceed. This was followed by a general shout of buen viage. And on the 16th of July of the same year

1721, being the day of the Triumph of the Cross, they weighed in order to return to California.

They continued their course along the middle of the gulf, but sometimes stood over to one coast, and sometimes to another, on account of the shoals and small islands, which they were to survey. In the mean time violent tempests and rains came on, by which very probably they would have been lost, had they, as some proposed, sailed up the river Colorado. The father, who was in the bilander, informed the mate in the pinnace, that being without a deck, he was exposed to great danger in such weather, that the boat was not of much importance if the people were saved; and therefore desired he would quit her, and come on board the bilander: but the intrepid sailor answered, that he did not fear the dangers of the sea; adding that if he would supply him with provisions, he would return to Loretto, keeping close along shore, that on any exigency they might save themselves. Accordingly, having received the provisions, he put off in the pinnace to continue his voyage. The bilander was now arrived at the islands of Sal-si-puedes, of which there is a great number, forming different channels at the entrance of a wide bay known among the divers, by that name. Here they were in such danger,

danger, that being driven by the wind and currents to avoid shipwreck, they were obliged to ride at anchor several nights; at last after many tedious tacks they weathered the island of Tiburon; possibly the same that father Consag in his map calls the Angel de la Guarda, when the rapidity of the currents drove them so far to leeward, that in six hours they lost the labour of eight days. These currents run with astonishing rapidity, and their noise is equal to that of a large rapid river among rocks; nor do they run only in one direction, but set in many intersected gyrations. For as there are great numbers of islands, so the current sets in several different directions.

The continuance of the danger however abated the general fear. But what chiefly encouraged the men, was, that for three nights successively, and while the tempests continued, the cross at the mast head was illuminated with the fire called St. Elmo, which they all construed as a mark of the divine protection, and notwithstanding the opposition of the currents, they determined to make a third attempt, in which they spent eight days, when their courage began to fail, and observing a convenient place in one of the islands, they came to an anchor intending to go ashore. This was now the more necessary, as of all the ship's company only
five

64 HISTORY OF

five were able to keep the deck; some were attacked by the scurvy, others cruelly suffered from the violent effects of the sea-water, and father Ugarte himself was not free from the scurvy, besides his other indispositions. It was certainly by the interposition of providence, that they put into this place, a violent tempest coming on immediately after, that had not the bilander been sufficiently sheltered, and well moored, she would undoubtedly have foundered. In this harbour they continued four days, but father Ugarte's disorders increased so upon him, that he determined to go in the boat to the Seris coast: and thence if possible to proceed by land to Guaymas. But this resolution caused such a general dejection in the ship's company, that the father promised not to leave them if it cost him his life. The sick now began every day to recover; and on Saturday the 18th of August, a fair wind carried them beyond the third current of Sal-fi-puedes, which runs towards the coast of California. Their joy was increased on the Sunday morning by the sight of three rainbows one above another, in the clouds over the island, which they had just weathered.

They now cheerfully continued their voyage, thinking all danger was past. But a little before they came to the bay of Conception, a storm

storm came on so suddenly, at N. E. by N. that they had hardly time to furl their topails, and take in two reefs in the forefail : at noon it was as dark as midnight, the claps of thunder were astonishing, the rain poured like a torrent from the clouds, and the sea broke in a frightful manner. But what increased their terror was, that within less than half a league they saw moving towards them a water spout. If ever they fervently implored the protection of our lady and the holy cross it was now; and father Ugarte himself says, that amidst all the various dangers of the voyage, this was the day of the greatest consternation. Providence, however, caused the wind to shift, by which means the clouds discharged themselves on the mountains of California: and the bilander, in the beginning of September, arrived safely in Conception bay. From hence they went in boats and mules to seek ease and refreshment after such a variety of sufferings, from the benevolence of father Sistiaga and his Indians of Mulege. Here the sick recovered, the few who were in health refreshed themselves, and in the middle of September, they all returned to Loretto in the bilander; and there found the pinnacle which had happily arrived some days before them. The advantages flowing from this survey of the gulf, added a pleasure to the re-

membrance of past dangers and hardships. For it now appeared that there were watering places for ships at several places near the shore, and Indians who readily shewed them to strangers; while the coast of New Spain from Guaymas to the Seris afforded very few, and these above a league from the shore. From the Seris to the mouth of the river Caborca the shore is, for the most part, steep and without water: from the Caborca to the Colorado, are only three watering places, and little or no pasture ground, the shore for many leagues being sandy and barren, and consequently desolate, so that not an Indian is to be seen. The subsequent survey of the coast of California by father Confag, confirms father Ugarte's observations. Another and no small advantage was, the observation made of the numbers and generosity of the Cochimies along the coast of California above the Indians of the opposite shore, and even above those of the same peninsula. For those who inhabited the Seris and Tepocas, tho' the father went among them, and offered them any satisfaction, he could not prevail upon them to assist him with any thing, tho' they saw the ship's company were in the greatest distress: but when every body was hard at work, they with great composure, lay sluggishly on the ground; nor have they during the

forty

forty years they have known the fathers, ever shewed them the least civility. A very liberal equivalent was offered them for some coarse earthen pots, but they would not part with them on any consideration. Whereas the northern Californians, on the occasions before related, and many others, always shewed the greatest candor and courtesy: and tho' they had never known the fathers, nor seen any vessels on their coast, they came voluntarily with their little presents before any thing had been given them. And when they found that their guests were not enemies, they with great alacrity assisted them with every thing in their power, and cheerfully lent a hand to ease them in their labours. They furnished the bilander's people with as many pots as they wanted, without requiring any return, and these of as neat workmanship as if they had been turned. Father Ugarte endeavoured to save some, that the other missionaries might see them. I mention this circumstance because, as I have observed in another place *, it does not appear that the Indians of any other district of California, had the least notion of turning clay to such uses. The same is confirmed by captain Woods Rogers in his voyage to the South sea, where he also charges the Californians of the south, with the same

* Part. I. sect. VI.

cowardice and sloth, which father Ugarte observed in the Seris. But an advantage still greater than the former is, that by this survey, they discovered the many gross errors of the ancient charts, maps, and journals, which placed islands, rivers, bays, and harbours, where there are none. And on the contrary, omitted those which are actually to be found on the two coasts of the gulf of California.

The extract of this voyage, which I have before me, does not enter into the particulars of every circumstance; for I should have copied these with more satisfaction, as affording more useful knowledge than is to be found in all others of that kind; so that I must content myself with saying, that this voyage answered its principal intention, which was to ascertain whether California was an island, or a peninsula joined to the continent of New Spain. It now evidently appeared to be a peninsula, separated from Pimeria, only by the river Colorado. The opinion therefore entertained by some at Mexico, who asserted that the galleons from the Philippine islands passed through a channel into the gulf of California, in their voyage to New Spain, was entirely groundless. It also appeared, that if there had been a communication betwixt the gulf and the South sea, the voyage this way, on account

count of the tempestuous weather, the shallowness of the water, the narrowness of the channel, the rapidity, and various directions of the currents, would have been absolutely impracticable to such large ships as the Philippine galleons.

Thus the only method of providing a receptacle for these ships, appeared to be the settling a colony and garrison, at some convenient harbour of the south coast. And in order to secure it from any danger on the land side, to extend the missions towards the harbour, and by that means reduce the inhabitants of both coasts of the gulf. We may therefore account for the many unsuccessful attempts that we have related in the foregoing parts of this work, exclusive of others made at different periods of time with less noise and expence, but equally unfortunate. About this time also, father Tamaral, at different times, surveyed great part of the coast northward from his mission of Purissima, and almost the whole of it towards Cape San Lucas, the viceroy having, in a very particular manner, directed him to look out for harbours and lands, where colonies and garrisons might be conveniently settled; but all proved ineffectual. With the same intention father Ugarte, on his arrival at Loreto, ordered preparations to be made for

a new attempt, and for making a survey of the south coast as far north as possible. By his order, the captain of the garrison went with a party of soldiers to the mission of Santa Rosalia de Mulege; and from thence, with father Sebastian de Sistiaga, to that of Guadalupe, where father Everard Helen was settled. On the 19th of November of the same year 1721, they departed from Guadalupe to the coast, which they traced beyond the 28th degree of latitude. And tho', in this excursion, they suffered in several respects, they had the satisfaction of finding three several harbours, with good watering-places, and a sufficiency of wood, but the soil too barren for culture. The largest and most secure harbour, which also had the best water, was not far from the Indian village of San Miguel, with the mission of San Xavier; and from whence the ships might be supplied with necessaries.

With these agreeable discoveries they returned to Loretto, where father Ugarte drew up a narrative of his voyage, adding the pilot Strafort's map and journal. Father Sistiaga likewise composed an account of his discoveries, with draughts of the harbours he had met with; all which were sent to Mexico to be presented to the viceroy, that he might take what measures he should think proper, and

F
 a survey of
 possible. By
 n went with
 f Santa Ro-
 with father
 Guadalupe,
 settled. On
 year 1721,
 the coast,
 th degree of
 rision, they
 ad the satis-
 bours, with
 fficiency of
 lture. The
 which also
 n the Indian
 tion of San
 ps might be
 they return-
 e drew up
 g the pilot
 her Sistiaga
 his disco-
 urs he had
 Mexico to
 he might
 nk proper,
 and

and transmit the several papers to his majesty, and the supreme council of the Indies. Whether these journals, maps, and narratives ever reached Madrid, I cannot pretend to say; but this unfortunate truth is well-known, that nothing was ordered by either government, in consequence of them. It is proper also to observe here, that tho' diligent search was made after these papers in Madrid, they could not be found; nor could any entreaty prevail to have them remitted for Mexico. I am sensible it would be a great satisfaction to the curious reader to find here the whole journal of father Ugarte, and the narrative of the fathers who discovered the several harbours, with a distinct account of the latitudes of every headland; the situation and views of the islands, coasts, harbours, and bays; their observations on the shoals, anchoring places, tides, currents, variations of the needle, &c. The charts, at least, drawn in these expeditions, are essentially necessary to form a complete idea of the discoveries; and, it may be added, that such maps, when accurate, are the principal advantage of these enterprizes. But notwithstanding all the means of information I enjoy, I find myself under a necessity of being the first, and the most interested in complaining of this deficiency; but I still comfort myself, that

no diligence has been wanting to retrieve them ; and still hope, that some time or other, if what I at present offer proves of any utility, and meets with the approbation of the publick, these vacuities will be filled up ; and his majesty's subjects enjoy all the knowledge of these countries, as the interests of the kingdom and church require.

S E C T. XVI.

The mission de Nuestra Señora de los Dolores del Sur founded by father Guillen, and that of St. Jago de los Coras, by father Napoli.

The care of general enterprizes, undertaken pursuant to the orders of his majesty, and his ministers, and for forming others for the advancement of the conquest, did not hinder the particular zeal of every missionary, in his district, for promoting religious knowledge and practice among his parishioners ; for increasing the number of missions, and extending these christian settlements as far as circumstances would permit. It was evident from the foundations, the progresses and surveys, taken northwards by sea and land, that the northern parts were less barren, and abounded more in
fresh

fresh water, than the southern. It was also found, that the nations and people of the north were much more docile; of better intellects; more peaceable and faithful; less vicious and petulant; and, consequently, naturally fitter for the reception of the gospel, and conforming to its precepts, than those of the south. On the contrary, the mission de la Paz had sent an account, that the whole Pericu nation, with its several branches of Guaycuros, Uchities, Coras and islanders were implacably vindictive, at continual wars, and by treachery, and open violence, constantly destroying one another; that unless they were all universally made christians, and brought to a solid reconciliation, there could be no security among them; and that a partial conversion would only increase the disorders. Likewise that the other vices of sloth, ingratitude, and fraud, were arrived at a greater height among this southern people, especially a brutal appetite, being not only permitted, but making a boast, and even a profit of polygamy.

But the same reasons which seem to entitle the northern people to the preference, rendered it necessary to attend first to that of the Pericues. For no garrison being obtained, as had been endeavoured, for la Paz; and the twenty-five soldiers at Loretto not being sufficient for the
 necessary

necessary escorts, journies, and defence of the countries, so distant from each other; the whole conquest, towards the north, was exposed, till several nations of the south should be reconciled and humanized. Besides, the Uchities, who live betwixt La Paz and Loretto, had insulted some christian Indians on their way, between these two places, as if they intended to cut off all communication by land between the two missions: the Coras, or those who lived at the extremity of the peninsula, near Cape San Lucas, were every day molesting their old enemies the Guaycuros of La Paz, and neighbourhood, the inhabitants of the islands of the San Joseph, Espiritu Santo, Ceralvo, and others, betwixt Loretto and La Paz, tho' by father Ugarte reconciled to the Guaycuros, renewed their former depredations in these parts; and the quantity of maize, pozoli, knives, and toys at La Paz, were with them incentives to avarice, instead of producing moderation and respect. These islanders had three times pillaged the mission of San Juan Baptista Liguí, or Malibat, in the absence of father Guillen the missionary, without leaving any thing behind them; and tho' the captain and soldiers of the garrison went in pursuit of them, killed three or four, took fourteen boats, and eleven men, who, after
being

being kindly entertained at Loretto, were sent back to their island, as a testimony of friendship and kindness; yet their pretended reconciliation lasted no longer than their fear, or whilst this suppressed their rancour against the inhabitants of the shore, or were not in want of little utensils. Thus the only remedy was to enter on a reduction of the Uchities and Coras, who lived on each side of La Paz; and gain the affections of the islanders. To this great end, in the same year 1721, the foundation of two new missions was undertaken, at the same time that the above surveys of the coast and gulf were making by land and sea.

The fund of the mission of San Juan Ligui, or Malibat had, as we have already noted, ceased by the failure of its endower Don Juan Baptista Lopes; and tho' father Guillen and the other missionaries were supplied for themselves and their Indians, it was by strict savings of the expenses, and straitening individuals for the sake of the general cause. Besides, the village and rancherias of Malibat had been extremely thinned by a dreadful epidemic, and the few Indians, who remained at every absence of the father, lived in such continual dread of new inroads from the islanders, that, for fear, they withdrew from the village. At this time, that religious nobleman the marquis

quis de Villa Puente, endowed two missions to be founded between cape San Lucas and Loreto. On which it was resolved that father Guillen should leave San Juan de Malibat for the visitation town, and found a new mission betwixt the Uchities and Guaycuros, the reduction of whom was of such immediate concern. Accordingly in the year 1721, the father settled among them, and immediately laid the foundations of a church, a village, and other buildings necessary to a new mission. In the month of August he fixed his residence along the shore of Apate, 40 leagues from Loreto by sea, and above 60 by land, on account of the unavoidable circuit of the mountains. The mission was dedicated to Nuestra Senora de los Dolores, with the addition of del Sur, to distinguish it from another mission of that name in the north. The hardships which father Guillen underwent in this department, the most barren and inconvenient of all California, and the zeal and incredible labour with which he cultivated this vineyard of his master, were never exceeded; and the consequences resulting from them more useful and beneficial than those of any other in California. In the year 1744, at the direction of his superiors, he sent a short account of the state of his mission. It is written with great reserve
and

and humility; and shews at once his virtue, great abilities, and penetrating judgment. This was the thirtieth year of his serving as missionary in California, where he arrived in the year 1714, after the deplorable shipwreck, in which his faithful companion father Guisi was drowned.

The mission of Los Dolores was founded purely for the conveniency of the Indians, but afterwards removed from the shore to a place called Tanuetia, 10 leagues from the gulf, and 25 from the South sea. The father sought the families of the Indians on both sides among the caves, woods, and recesses of those craggy mountains, and assembled them into six villages, Nuestra Senora de los Dolores, La Concepcion de Nuestra Senora, La Incarnation, La Trinidad, La Redemption, and La Resurrection; which had been inhabited by the Indians of Malibat, before they quitted this part of the country. He likewise converted to the faith other Indians, whom he formed into three villages; and of these was erected the new mission of San Luis Gonzaga, on the endowment of the count de St. Jago, who lived at Mexico; and in the year 1737, a particular missionary was appointed for it. Lastly, he instructed and converted all the other heathens of the south coast, from the mission of San
Xavier

Xavier to the nation of the Coras. They were all registered as catechumens, and well disposed to be incorporated in another mission, which was to be founded that year; and was the more necessary from its being impossible, considering the great distances, and the nature of the country, to give proper instruction and relief to all. Thus by him alone were brought to christianity, all the inhabitants for above 40 leagues of the peninsula, from the one coast to the other; yet in all this tract, the soil is so rocky and barren, that no place could be found for sowing any grain, except a little maize at Aparte, barely sufficient for the Indians there. This shews the extreme indigence of the Indians in these parts; and likewise the inability of the missionaries to give them any relief. Yet his labours were so successful here, that, amidst all the subsequent rebellions of the south, father Guillen's Guaycuros, and Uchities, once so turbulent, are now, contrary to the example and strong instigation of the Periques and Coras, not only firm in the profession of the faith, but the mission de los Dolores del Sur, was the asylum, where the refugee fathers, and Indians, met with an affectionate reception.

For the reasons already specified, there was founded, during the same year, another mission,
endowed

endowed by the marquis de la Puente, in the nation of the Coras, not far from Cape San Lucas. This the father superior Ugarte was very solicitous of establishing; and, accordingly, before he undertook to survey the gulf, he had left directions, with every thing necessary, that father Ignacio Maria Napoli should go to La Paz, and from thence to the bay of Palmas, the place chosen for the new mission. Loreto, at that time, laboured under a great scarcity of provisions; but the bark with the provisions and supplies being soon expected from New Spain, father Ugarte empowered the new missionary to take what should be sent for his mission of San Xavier, together with whatever else he stood in need of, and proceed in the bark to his station, carefully conforming to the instructions which he had given him with regard to his actions, on all occasions. The bark arrived in the middle of July; and on the 21st of the same month, father Napoli embarking with captain Don Estevan Rodrigues, and four soldiers, happily arrived at La Paz, on the 2d of August. At his landing, the Indians of the mission received him with great veneration, kissing his hand on their knees, and in procession conducted him with the captain and soldiers to the church, where father Jayme Bravo was waiting for him. The bark
was

was dismissed for the coast of Cinaloa to load maize for Loretto; so that to convey the necessaries to the bay of Palmas, they were obliged to borrow the boats belonging to general Rezaval's bilander, which was come up the bay to fish for pearls. The fathers and soldiers went by land, in order to clear a way for La Paz, and invite to the mission what Indians they should meet with. Eight days were spent in reaching the bay, where they arrived on the 24th of August; but all the Indians had withdrawn farther up the country, and the rancherias they met with in the way, were all abandoned. The boats with the necessaries did not arrive till five days after they came to the bay, which, with the retreat of the Indians, gave father Napoli great uneasiness. Besides, his extreme pains, occasioned by a violent fall from his mule, when he remained for some time senseless, and, by his company, was given over for dead.

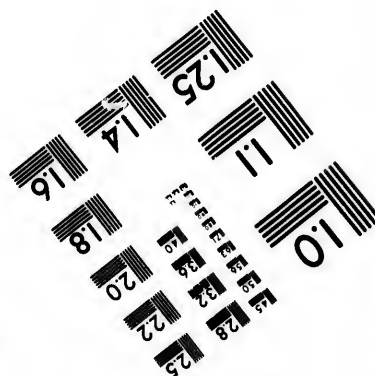
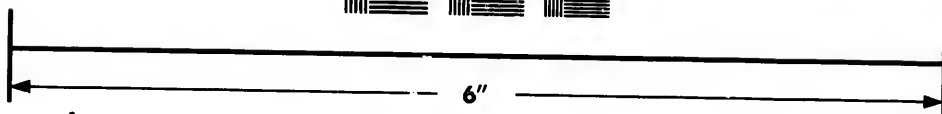
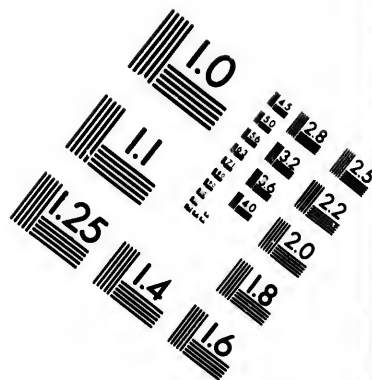
One evening, as he was walking at some distance from the tent, to view the shore, he saw furiously running towards him, a company of naked Indians, headed by one, who, besides his extraordinary stature and bulk, was painted all over black and red. He was partly covered with a kind of hair cloak; several deers feet were hanging about his waist; in one hand he held

held a fan of feathers, and in the other a bow with an arrow on it. The terror of his frightful howlings, accompanied with those of his followers, was increased by their threatening gestures. Father Napoli now thought that his last hour was inevitably come; and, lifting up his heart to God, he fervently offered to him the sacrifice of his life, imploring that his sins might be forgiven. After this, he boldly advanced towards the Indians, suppressing as much as possible his natural timidity, agreeable to the instructions given him of never betraying the least fear. At first, having never heard any thing of the dress of the Californian forcerers, he was shocked at his frightful appearance, and even doubted whether it was not the devil himself, in a visible form, leading on the Indians to destroy him as the messenger of Christ. But soon recovering from his first astonishment, he approached him with a look of contempt; signifying, at the same time, by signs to the Indians, that he took it ill, they should intend him any harm; and then with the most endearing marks of love distributed among them several trifling articles he had about him; inviting them to the camp, where he would give them more. This kindness of the father had its desired effect; they kept him company, till by degrees he brought them to

the tent; where, after being liberally treated, some provisions and little utensils were given them, and others sent to those who remained in their rancherias, as tokens of peace and friendship. The Indians departed highly satisfied; but desired, if they would have them return, to hide the beasts, and a dog, which, as they had never seen before, they were much frightened at. The day following they came in little troops to the number of five hundred, bringing such presents as the country afforded, which were returned with pozoli, sackcloth-frocks, razors, and the like, which had been got ready for this purpose. It was now five days since they had pitched the tent, and without any account of the boat, the loss of which would have reduced them to the utmost extremity. But they had landed four days before, and waited for the rest of the company, who came by land, in a little lake, a few leagues off, thinking that had been the place appointed for the rendezvous. The first account of them was from the Indians; and they being acquainted on what part of the shore the father was, the goods were landed, and a survey taken of the country, in order for settling the mission. Besides several thickets of palm-trees, and places over-grown with sedge, there were near the sea several ponds of fresh
water,

water, as likewise a brook, tho' these were by no means convenient watering-places. They likewise met with some spots of ground that promised very well for pasture and tillage; yet on account of the nearness of La Paz, and the facility of receiving supplies, the father determined to found the mission at the place where they first pitched their tent. Accordingly the ground was cleared, and the little village began to assume some form; when, on a sudden, all the Indians disappeared, and not one was seen for a whole day. The father, at a loss what could occasion this hasty change, determined, in the evening, to go in quest of them, with only a soldier, and an unskilful interpreter. He found out some, who, on his complaining in an affectionate manner, made no difficulty of acquainting him with the true cause of their fear. The Coras were engaged in an inveterate war with the Guaycuros of La Paz; and the father had come with soldiers from the territory of the latter, in which there was already a mission. The Coras had seen a survey taken of the whole country, and walls making for the church; which, tho' only of earth, and ill put together, the Indians concluded were designed for some fortress. Lastly, the father had brought with him some Guaycuros; and three of these had, by the father's orders, gone





Photographic Sciences Corporation

**23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503**



that day along the open road to La Paz, to convoy from thence a mule loaded with maize.

These particulars raised a suspicion in the Coras, that the Guaycuros were come to massacre all the nation; that this was the end of the taking a view of the country; of their treating them, and desiring to see them every day; that they were building walls for their security, and that, reckoning themselves sure of the success of the attempt, they had sent for all the nation of the Guaycuros to come and join in it; and thus falling on them suddenly destroy them root and branch. The father took such pains to remove their suspicion and quiet them, that many came with him to the tent and harbour made of palm leaves, where the soldiers kept guard. On the other hand the more fearful Indians lighted several fires, that they might better perceive their enemies, if they should attempt to destroy them. The next morning their fears returned a second time, that for two days not one of them was to be seen. And now father Bravo who had a tolerable knowledge of the Guyacuri tongue, and could be well understood by the Coras, was so far from being of any service in this exigency, that he did the greatest hurt, being looked upon as the father, head, and leader of their enemies. The mule which had been detained with the maize

came

came up; and tho' the Indians at a distance saw the reality of what father Napoli had told them, they would not return to their dwellings. It was in vain to go after them, as they immediately betook themselves to flight. At last however, men and women with their children returned continually, and even entreated that their children might be baptized like those of La Paz; and that they might be friends for ever. And thus a peace was concluded betwixt the Guaycuros and Coras: which reconciliation was allowed to be celebrated with their usual festivities and dancings. The fourth of September, father Napoli baptized twenty nine children; after which the women were continually coming to him, and begging the like favour for their children. Thus the inhabitants of this country, formerly so suspicious, were now never easy, but when with the fathers.

Every thing that had been brought, even to the furniture of the altar, had now been distributed to the Indians for gaining their affections, so that there scarce remained a sufficiency of provisions for returning to La Paz, to procure a new supply. Accordingly, leaving the house of palm-trees, and a little furniture in the care of some of the eldest, with many assurances from father Napoli of a speedy return, they set

out by a new way, in order to make a more accurate survey of the country.

Father Napoli staid two months at the mission of La Paz, waiting for provisions and applying himself to the language of the Coras; a task of the utmost difficulty, tho' absolutely necessary to be performed. Whilst the fathers were absent from Palmas bay, forty men from the island of Cerralvo, opposite to the bay of La Paz, landed; and finding the mission without a father or guard, they fell upon a rancheria, killed six young children, two women and a man, and took a young man prisoner; after which they pillaged the rancheria of all its stores and furniture. Nor had the church and chapel escaped, had not the ravagers been afraid that on any longer stay, the whole nation of the Guaycuros, would be in arms against them. However the captain with a party of soldiers went in two boats to the island of Cerralvo: and tho' the islanders retired among the caves and rocks, our men killed two or three of them, which, with the firing of their pieces, proved a terrible warning to them for the future. The captain immediately marched for Loretto, and in November father Napoli returned to Palmas bay; which, however, he did not think fit to make the seat of the mission, on account of its
its

its great distance from La Paz, at that time the only place for supplies.

Accordingly he made choice of a spot of ground called St. Anne, lying up the country thirty leagues from La Paz, and five from the gulf, where he built a chapel and a small house; and brought the nearest rancherias to the belief and regular practice of christianity. In the year 1723, he built a church in a place something farther from the sea, intending to alter the seat of the mission; but the whole miscarried by an incident which it was impossible to prevent. The church was now so far finished that the beams and rafters were laid for the roof; and whilst the father was assisting a dying person, one of those terrible hurricanes usual in this country arose; at which the Indians fled for shelter to the church; but the roof being but imperfectly settled, and the walls of themselves, but weak and not thoroughly dried, the force of the wind blew down the whole building, by which some Indians were killed, others maimed, and the living frantick with dread and horror. Father Napoli at the noise hastened to the place, and behaved with all the tenderness of an afflicted father: but this accident proved the foundation of a conspiracy among the relations of those who were killed; and he every day saw the beginning and period of such combinations from

leffer motives : but their rage was now wholly bent against the father, as the murderer of their friends. They were however soon appeased, when the survivors informed them that they had retired thither of their own accord, without being bid by any one. However, the church was rebuilt in a more convenient part which afforded water, not only for drinking, but for fertilizing some little spots for sowing in the neighbourhood, and was dedicated to St. James the apostle. Some ground having been cleared for sowing maize, it was found to answer very well. The like unhappily cannot be said of the spiritual seed : this giddy, slothful, brutish people shewing a great reluctance to the pure doctrine of the gospel : and tho' the father neglected no part of a faithful minister, the whole number of those he baptized amounted to no more than ninety adults, and about four hundred children. In the year 1726, father Napoli being appointed for the missions on the other side ; was succeeded by father Lorenzo Carranzo, whose blood was shed in this wilderness, over-run with the most abominable corruptions ; as we shall hereafter more particularly relate.

S E C T.

S E C T. XVII.

Foundation of the northern mission of San Ignacio by father Luyando and its progresses. Death of the fathers Piccolo and Ugarte. Insurrections of the Pericues, and foundation of the mission of St. Joseph at cape San Lucas, by father Tamaral.

Ever since the year 1706, it had been greatly desired that a mission should be founded in the N. beyond that of Nuestra Senora de Guadalupe in the country of Kada-Kaaman, i. e. Sedgebrook, among the Sierra de San Vicente in the latitude of twenty eight degrees, forty leagues S. E. of Santa Rosalia Mulege, and twenty five S. of Guadalupe. The Cochimi Indians of that district had, with all the signs of sincerity, expressed a desire of becoming christians, on the occasion of father Piccolo's visit in the same year; but from the want both of instructors and funds, together with the immediate necessity of reducing the Edues and Pericues in the S. occasioned the work, however desirable, to be delayed. The neighbouring missionaries, however visited them occasionally to cherish their good dispositions, till the year

year 1728. In the preceding year there arrived at Loretto, father Juan Baptista Luyando a Mexican Jesuit of most excellent parts and qualities, who not only delivered up his fortune into the hands of his superiors, for the foundation of a mission in California, but also offered in person to be himself the founder. Accordingly, in January 1728, he set out from Loretto, accompanied by nine soldiers, and on the 20th of the same month, came to the place which had been marked out for the seat of this mission, by father Sistiaga, of Santa Rosalia Mulege, who for some months before had visited the Indians to acquaint them with the design, and prepare their minds for giving the father a favourable reception. Accordingly, father Luyando was received by the natives with all the appearance of satisfaction, and in a few days he found about him five hundred persons from several rancherias. He now entered on his office, which was the easier, as some were already acquainted with their catechism, and most had heard father Sistiaga. And they applied themselves with such assiduity, to imbibe his instructions in the doctrinal and practical parts of the christian religion, that in a little time he had the pleasure of perceiving from the stability of their good dispositions, that he might safely administer baptism to the adults, especially

cially as they readily complied with the preliminary of breaking and burning all the superstitious implements of their forcerers. For above six months the father was enabled to support near five hundred catechumens: for tho' some after baptism returned to their rancherias, they were abundantly replaced, that he began to be under apprehensions of the provisions failing; therefore that nothing might be wanting in him towards the completion of a work so happily begun, he dismissed seven soldiers with letters, earnestly requesting a speedy supply from Loretto, and thus remained with only two guards. It must be said to the praise of the soldiers, that seeing the father so taken up in the immediate functions of his office, and with so much success, they voluntarily took upon themselves the labour of building a church and a house, which, by the help of the Indians who readily lent a hand to whatever they were directed, the church was nearly finished before the soldiers set out on their return. and the dedication of it performed on Christmas day that year.

As these successes filled the missionary's heart with joy, so they animated him readily to take under his instruction, all who came to the seat of the mission, and likewise to make excursions on all quarters in search of new Indians.

He

He was particularly sent for once a great way off, by one who had been bit by a viper: and tho' both the foldier and the servant who understood the language were absent, he ventured himself with only one of the natives, who had been already baptized. On his arrival at the place, he found a large rancheria of savages, who had never so much as seen an European or a horse: accordingly they were at first greatly terrified, but the presents the father brought with him and his graceful carriage, soon removed their fears: and they all came about him offering him all they had.

This docility of the Cochimes, together with the vivacity, genius, and activity of body, in which they surpass all the other nations, enabled the missionary to make great improvements in their country. This district is very proper for agriculture, both on account of the softness of the earth, and the easiness of procuring water, so that a large colony might easily subsist there; and the Indians be no longer under a necessity of roving among the woods and mountains for support. Father Sistiaga had before sown maize and wheat, which in the first year yielded together a hundred bushels: but in the fourth and last year of father Luyando, the harvest, every sort of grain included, amounted to a thousand bushels. The consequence of this,

was

was a more easy and plentiful supply to the Indians, who, being less brutish than their neighbours, willingly assisted in the labour, which they saw was entirely for their benefit. Father Helen, at another entrance, had already taught them to cultivate several sorts of garden vegetables, which he himself had planted: and father Luyando laid out a spot of ground for a garden, where exotick plants, in that barren land thrive very well, and others which were natives of it improved under his culture. He likewise planted five hundred vines, together with olive-trees, fig-trees, and sugar-canes, which have since proved of great advantage to a mission so remote, and not a little contributed to the extraordinary increase of it, and the improvement of real christianity among the Indians. The father was now desirous of assembling the Indians in villages, built in the most convenient place for the neighbouring rancherias, with a chapel in each, that they might there daily perform their devotions. He likewise taught them to make little houses of adobes and boughs of trees, tho' being always used to the open air, it was with great difficulty they could be reconciled to live in them. In the parts fit for pastures, he likewise endeavoured to breed great and small cattle for the use of the mission.

Thus

Thus every thing wore a very pleasing aspect; but the great enemy to the peace and happiness of mankind, instigated the Indians to oppose the tranquility of the mission, and render all the pains of the father abortive. Accordingly, eight of these savages taking advantage of a dark night murdered a catechumen near the father's cottage, probably because the missionary shewed a great regard to him for his amiable dispositions. It was necessary however not to take notice of this barbarous act, lest greater mischief should ensue; but it did not escape the divine vengeance, all the eight miserably dying in the epidemia of the following year 1729. Another rancheria obstinately refused to come to the mission; and on the baptism of the three first adults, fought for them in order to destroy them, which they would certainly have effected, had not they taken refuge in the father's house: two years they persisted in this stubborn humour, till their depravity was overcome by the patience, gentleness, and liberality of the father: but it was not till seven years after, that those advanced in years embraced the christian religion. The old men indeed, in every rancheria expressed the greatest acrimony against christianity: and as these were generally the forcerers, priests, and teachers, or rather deceivers of the rancherias,

rias, it is no wonder that they should oppose the progress of christianity, which put a period to all their profits and power: their lives also were profligate; their brutish customs and savage manner of living had taken deeper root in them; their attendance at church and devout exercises, was a more painful constraint on them; and having been the respected teachers of the nation, they could not prevail on themselves to be scholars to strangers, or stand among boys, and even be ridiculed by them for their absurd doctrines.

Amidst these various transactions, the mission went on very prosperously, which was in a great measure owing to the docility and candour of these Indians, who used frankly to acquaint father Luyando with whatever they saw amiss in their countrymen: so that he easily prevailed upon them, in order to facilitate his visiting them in the rancherias, and afterwards in the villages which were building, to clear ways for them to the seat of the mission: and for their encouragement, he proposed rewards which he bestowed on those who distinguished themselves in the work.

Some wild Indians of the N. instigated by malice, at the flourishing state of the mission, and the tranquility enjoyed by the converted tribe, fell upon a christian rancheria, killing two Indians;

dians, and a little girl, all the others having fled to the seat of the mission. The christians of the other rancherias were for taking arms against the invaders, but the father fearing it might kindle a perpetual war, entreated them to forbear, and patiently forgive injuries as became christians. He flattered himself that this tranquility and forbearance would have a good effect on the enemy, and induce them by degrees to receive the gospel; to forward which, he sent them some messages and presents: but experience shewed his mistake; and that these barbarians are first to be quelled by force, as they afterwards readily believe that whatever kindness is done them, proceeds from love: whereas, otherwise they attribute it to weakness and cowardice; mildness and presents only increasing their insolence. Accordingly the invaders from the mild messages and presents, concluded the father and his Indians were in a terrible consternation: and this animated them to attack other rancherias; plundering where-ever they came, killing or driving the christians before them, and threatening the seat of the mission. As the father had only two soldiers with him and the Indians were terrified and unarmed, he judged it advisable to withdraw to the mission of Guadalupe, where father Sistiaga officiated. From hence both the fathers returned to San Ignacio, where

where it was resolved vigorously to march against the enemy, without waiting for soldiers from Loretto, which was seventy leagues distant. Accordingly, the christian rancherias were summoned; and arms given them, with great noise and hurry both to raise the spirits of the christians, and intimidate the savages, by the great and tumultuous preparatives for war, according to the ancient custom of California: some made bows; others were sharpening pieces of stone for the arrows; some went to cut wood for spears, which till then had not been known in this country, and at the ends of which the soldiers fixed large knives, that had been brought to distribute among the missions. The very women made bags and nets for carrying the provisions, roasted maize, and baked biscuit. The preparations being finished, the people were reviewed and found to be above seven hundred men fit for action: but there not being provisions for such a number, those of weak constitutions were discharged, so that only three hundred and fifty stout men remained for the expedition. But these were of different rancherias, and the custom was for every one to chuse their captain, which, at present, would have given rise to fatal confusion. The fathers therefore acquainted them, that it was proper for all to be under one command: that there-

fore two captains should be appointed ; one by them, and the other by the fathers ; both of their nation, men of courage and conduct and well acquainted with the country. Accordingly, they chose one among them of great reputation : and the person appointed by the fathers, was the governor of the village that year, a young man of good parts and faithful, who had been brought up at Loretto, whither father Ugarte carried him when a child at the time of cutting the timber for the bilander. The whole army thus equiped, marched in quest of the enemy, and the scouts soon brought advice that they waited for them by a watering place near the skirts of the mountains. On this advice it was determined to attack them during the night. Accordingly they marched up to them, and surrounded them on all sides ; after which they gradually approached them with the greatest silence, lest they should give them any alarm. At sun-rise the Indians, who on all sides had hem'd in their enemies, set up a dreadful shout of war, which awaked the savages, who were sleeping without any apprehension of danger. At this shout they started on their feet, sought confusedly about for their arms, while the other advanced on all sides in good order ; so that the enemy, finding themselves surrounded by a superior force, and their retreat

treat cut off, laid down their arms as a sign of submission. Two only found means to escape; and giving advice of the defeat to a few of another rancheria, they precipitately fled to their own country, so that the remainder, to the number of thirty four, were easily made prisoners: and after the country had been reconnoitred to know if it was clear of the enemies, our people returned to San Ignacio, which they entered with their prisoners in a kind of triumph. The fathers led the victorious army to the church, where thanks were returned for this victory gained without shedding any blood, or even discharging a single arrow. The men also were entertained, and next day all the people were assembled: and the soldiers and governors sitting as judges, the prisoners were brought to trial; where, being convicted of rebellion, robberies, and murders, they were sentenced to be removed to Loretto as guilty of capital crimes. Sentence being passed, they were remanded to prison very much dejected, whilst many of the new christians danced for joy, thinking they should now have the pleasure of killing their enemies and revenging themselves. But the fathers came up, and assured the captives that they should not die; made them some presents, and mildly reproved the exultations of the others; taking occasion to instruct them

in the duties of charity, and christian compassion, forgiveness and living peaceably with all men. The next day the court sat again at the request of the fathers, who brought with them many Indians to desire the soldiers that they would soften their sentence without inflicting death, or sending the prisoners to Loretto. Accordingly each was to receive a certain number of lashes. The execution began with the principal murderer: but the fathers again interceded that the punishment should be limited to him, and the rest pardon'd, which was complied with; and the prisoners being deprived of their arms, which were distributed among the leading men of the forces, as monuments of the victory, were discharged. This extraordinary lenity had a very good effect among the savages: the christians being instructed, and the gentiles filled with affection for the fathers and their law, which enjoined such mild treatment. They were detained some days, but at full liberty that they might see the good behaviour and conformable way of living of the Indians of the mission. They begged of the fathers that they would baptize them and their sons, but it was thought proper to refuse them, both to augment their desire and to try their sincerity. They were dismissed with great affection: but they soon returned, requesting that at least their children

children might be baptized, as otherwise they should think that the fathers did not love them; and that the christians intended to carry on a second war. In this they were gratify'd, except a son of the principal murderer, or head of the conspiracy, who, like the rest, went away very disconsolate. But returning a second time with his little son in his arms, begging with tears, that he might be baptized if they killed him; accordingly the child was baptized, and he chearfully went away to rejoin his countrymen. A few months after, all the former prisoners, with their relations and families, and even decrepit old men, came to be instructed in order to baptism; which, at a proper time, was administered to all.

This victory was of great service to the cause of christianity, by intimidating the gentiles and recommending the law which the strangers preached, to their favourable receptions, so that a free passage was now opened towards the nations of the North. But father Luyando's health was so impair'd by fatigues, that he was obliged to quit the mission which he had founded with his fortune, and improved by his zeal and abilities. He was succeeded by father Sistiaga the indefatigable missionary of Santa Rosalia Mulege.

At the same time California lost two of its most ancient labourers: the first was father Francisco Maria Piccolo, who, full of days, ended his labours in the royal garrison of Loreto, on the 22d of February 1729, in the 79th year of his age; and the 32d from his coming to California. In the following year 1730, at the village of San Pablo belonging to the mission of San Xavier, father Juan Ugarte quietly breathed his last in his 70th year, after having served 30 as a missionary in California.

In the mean time the southern nations were every day shewing those turbulent, lawless, and treacherous dispositions, of which, from the beginning they had given too many proofs. And notwithstanding father Guillen at Dolores, Father Bravo at La Paz, and father Napoli at San Jago; and since them their successors, had civilized many of the Uchiti, Guaycuros, and the Coras; and brought them within the pale of the church; yet even in those and the adjacent nations, great numbers of gentiles remained, who were constantly insulting the christians; many of whom, were daily less fond of the rational and orderly life to which they were now brought, and even making no secret of their disgust; fomenting seditions and infecting those who remained quiet in the faith. In the year 1723, all the three missions being recently

cently founded, the captain of the garrison with some soldiers made a progress about the country to terrify those who molested their neighbours. The Coras of cape San Lucas very earnestly desired that the father might be sent to make them christians; but others who had already embraced the faith, gave him sufficient trouble, and a gentile accidentally wounded him in the shoulder with an arrow. Yet he bravely concealed it for two months, whilst he was under cure at La Paz, that the accident was not to be so much as known to the faithful Indians of Loretto, with whom however it was proper to use such precautions.

In the year 1725, the captain was obliged a second time to march with an armed force to some rancherias of Uchities and Guaycuros, who were withdrawn towards the opposite coast, but without killing a man. These and some Coras had in the year 1719, renewed their outrages, chiefly at the instigation of some Mulattoes and Mestizos left on those coasts by foreign privateers, who happened to touch there. These were the leaven which corrupted the simplicity of those Indians, of themselves too susceptible of bad impressions. For as captain don Estevan Rodrigues observes in his journal, "the natives here are so naturally uneasy, turbulent, and factious, that unless a party of the garrison goes

every year to suppress their commotions and check their insolence, there would be no living in safety." The captain was employed in this survey from March to September of that year, when some rancherias of cape San Lucas again urged them to send them fathers. But they were now obliged to have recourse to some slight punishment. The good dispositions of some for receiving the faith; the continual dread of invasions from others; and of the desertion of new converts, rendered it absolutely necessary to hasten the foundation of other missions among the Pericues, in order to secure the reduction of the peninsula as far as the cape above mentioned.

This total conversion of the Indians, the marquis de Villa Puente, a most munificent benefactor to these missions, had very much at heart; he made an offer of establishing one in the neighbourhood of cape San Lucas, and, animated by his example, his cousin donna Rosa de la Penna, sister to the marchioness of Villa Puente, a lady of eminent virtues, and exemplary charity, to endow another intended to be founded in Las Palmas bay, the original situation of the mission of San Jago de los Coras, since removed to such a distance, that the missionary could by no means attend the necessities and instruction of these Indians; and their

indo.

indocility and turbulency rendered it still more difficult and discouraging.

The agent for California at Mexico, was father Joseph de Echeveria, who, on the loss of the bark in 1729 with all the provisions, the people with great difficulty saving themselves in a boat, went over to Cinaloa to purchase another vessel, and make preparations for a fresh supply. In this he was engaged when the father general Tamburini's nomination of him for visitor general of all the missions of the Jesuits arrived from Rome. On receipt of this order, he prepared to begin his visitation with those of California, whose agent he had been for several years : and purposing to accomplish the foundation of the two new missions in the South, for which the endowments had been already offered, he embarked at Ahome in the Triumph of the Cross, which, on the ninth day being the 27th of October, happily landed him in San Dionysio or Loretto bay.

A few days after his arrival, he was seized with a malignant fever, so that his life was despaired of ; but providence was pleased to restore his health : he did not however stay till it was confirmed, but left Loretto to proceed on his visitation of the northern missions, having with him only the ensign, a soldier named Acosta, and a few Indians. The good father's heart
over-

overflowed with joy at seeing the œconomy of the missions, the knowledge, devotion, and regular behaviour of the Indians, the zeal and charity of the missionaries, their labours and patience in forming and attending on their parishioners, under all the inconveniencies and hardships of that wild solitude; and lastly the great progress christianity had made in so short a time. In a letter dated the 10th of February 1730, he has these expressions. “ The fever having by the goodness of God left me, I set out to visit the missions, beginning with San Xavier to San Ignacio del Norte, which is the last, and from hence about eighty leagues. The whole journey took me up forty eight days, the cold being severer here than at Guapango in January. But I was well rewarded for all these fatigues, were it only in seeing the fervour of these new christian establishments. And the least I could do was to shed tears of joy at so frequently hearing God praised from the mouths of poor creatures, who very lately did not so much as know whether there was any such Being.” In the same letter he gives a detail of the particulars he observed in every mission; their polity and the fatigues of the fathers.

Father

Father Echeveria now prepared for visiting the southern parts of California, where he was desirous of founding two new missions among the Coras; but only that of San Joseph del Cabo could then take place. Father Sigismund Taraval appointed missionary for the other, which had been projected under the name of Santa Rosa, in honour of the founders not arriving till May 1730: besides the deaths of the fathers Piccoli and Ugarte; and the retreat of fathers Helen, Bravo & Napoli, occasioned by the ill state of their health, rendered it necessary to employ the new labourers in such settlements as were destitute.

The intended mission, near cape San Lucas, required a person of consummate virtue, intrepid zeal, great sagacity, and address: such was father Nicholas Tamaral, founder of the mission of La Purissima Conception; and he fortunately was appointed for founding that of San Joseph del Cabo. According he embarked the 10th of March, with the father visitor, leaving directions that father Taraval, on his arrival, should immediately go and officiate at La Purissima; and, having a fair wind, in nine days, they arrived in the bay of La Paz, where they were received with the most cordial affection by father William Gordon, successor to father Bravo, at El Pilar de la Paz;

Paz; and with him they solemnly celebrated the festival of the patriarch San Joseph.

The tranquility and christian deportment of the Guaycuros of this mission, before so much dreaded, filled the fathers with the most pleasing satisfaction. They next visited the mission of San Jago de los Coras, and from thence continued their journey to cape San Lucas, the southern extremity of California, in the neighbourhood of which they intended to found the new mission of San Joseph. At some distance from the cape, they found a verdant spot, shaded by the circumjacent mountains, and thro' it ran two rivulets, which joined each other a little before they discharged themselves into the sea, which is about a league from the spot abovementioned; and on the shore were several lakes, abounding with fish, and surrounded with withered stocks of palm-trees, the Indians having lopped off their branches. Near one of these fresh-water lakes, in a level spot, a good soil, and defended from inundations, the fathers appointed for the seat of the mission; and accordingly a chapel and house, covered with rushes and sedge, of which the coast afforded great plenty, were soon run up. The fathers, from the account given by the captain of the garrison of the numbers, and repeated desires of the Indians of having

a father among them, expected that they would have flocked to them, but very few were seen ; and, during the three weeks that the father visitor continued there, scarce twenty families came into the mission. With these, however, father Tamaral entered on his charge, instructing them in the doctrines of the christian religion. The Indians, on being asked whither the rest of their countrymen were retired, answered they all had died of an epidemia : but this was an equivocation, proceeding from their fear, for as soon as the father visitor, with his two soldiers attending him, were gone, and father Tamaral left with only two others, the Indians repaired to him by multitudes ; and the reason for their not appearing sooner, was a persuasion, that the fathers were come with soldiers and armed men, to punish some disturbances and assaults on the missions of San Jago, and La Paz. Matters being thus accommodated, the father took a journey thro' the country, in search of the rancherias, and a more convenient spot for the seat of the mission ; the first situation being infested with muskettos, and other troublesome insects, to an intolerable degree ; it was also close and hot ; the country damp, and water for the little arable ground very uncertain. These circumstances were sufficient to prevail on them to remove the mission

to

to another spot, 5 leagues from the sea, where a church and house were immediately built, as well as circumstances would permit; and afterwards, by incessant labours, several roving rancherias were assembled and distributed into two villages; where they were instructed with such success, that in one year only he baptized a thousand and thirty-six souls. He likewise attended to promote the temporal welfare of the mission, as being in some measure the foundation of its progress and security; but the death of this missionary has deprived us of the particular accounts of the following years.

S E C T. XVIII.

Survey of the islands of Dolores, by father Taraval. Account of others formed by the channel of Santa Barbara, in the South sea. Foundation of the mission of Santa Rosa, by that father. Insurrection of the Coras, for want of a garison.

Two months after the fathers Echeveria and Tamaral had set out on the preceding expedition, father Sigismund Taraval, nominated for founding, among the Coras, the proposed mission of Santa Rosa, arrived in Loretto bay
in

in May 1730. This father was possessed of all the qualifications requisite for an enterprise of such difficulty. He was only in the 30th year of his age; but his mind was adorned with all the sciences and learning, requisite to the discharge of his function. He was born at Todi, in the Milanese, being the son of don Miguel de Taraval by donna Teresa de Andrade. His father had served with the greatest reputation in the army, where he died of his wounds, in quality of lieutenant general, to which his merit had raised him. His son, at eighteen years of age, took the habit of the order in the college of Ocana, where he was a boarder. He went thro' his noviciate at Madrid, and having afterwards happily distinguished himself in the sublimer sciences, in the college of Alcala de Henarez, under father Alexandro Laguna, he was sent to finish his studies at Mexico, where his distinguished talents procured him to be appointed founder of a new mission in California. The father provincial Juan Antonio de Oviedo also recommended to him the collecting of materials, for a history of the whole mission, from its beginning; and to his attention and judgment, most of the particulars in this narrative are owing.

This year the mission of Santa Rosa could not well be undertaken. Father Taraval, according

cording to the orders left at Loretto, by the father visitor Echeveria, going to the mission of La Purissima to officiate, during the absence of father Taramal, who undertook to survey the islands lying near the coast.

He set out, accompanied with some Indians, on the festival of San Xavier, and after travelling six days came to a point of land, or cape on the coast of Anawa, where a vast bay, many leagues in breadth, begins, and to which he gave the name of San Xavier. From this place they discerned two islands, six or seven leagues from the coast; and having made a raft of timber, which they formed near the shore, they went over to the first island, by the natives called Afegua, i. e. the bird island. This is very small; not above hal a mile in length, and less in breadth, without a single inhabitant, being absolutely destitute both of verdure and fresh water. Prodigious flight of birds frequent it, and from thence it derives its name. Among these, besides the known species, are two remarkable; one something bigger than a sparrow, but quite black; they live all day in the sea, and at night repair to the land, where they have nests, which they make, by digging burrows in the ground, like rabbits; but being only four feet deep, they are easily caught. The other is of the bigness
of

of a goose, with black wings, a white breast and claws, and a beak resembling those of the birds of prey. These, like the former, make their nests in the ground, but three or four yards below the surface, and never visit them but in a calm, living day and night in the sea, while the rough weather lasts. The Indians of the coast, and those of the neighbouring islands, often come hither to catch these birds.

The other island, in the country language, is called Amalgua, i. e. fog island: and lies about 4 or 5 leagues from the former. They walked over this island also; and found it to be nearly triangular: the distance from the western to the northern point, is two days journey, and one a-cross it, in the narrowest part. In the middle of it is a conical mountain, of a considerable height; it has fresh water-springs; and in three little bays are several pits, dug by the Indians; but the anchoring-places are narrow, and without any shelter from the sea, which on these coasts runs very high. It also affords some deer, tho' smaller than those of California, but the hair longer and closer: likewise rabbits; and among these a black kind, very small, but their fur softer than that of a beaver, numbers of which are found here, and, many of them killed by the Indians. This island is also much frequented by sea-wolves, of

different kinds ; likewise a great variety of birds. On these the Indians live ; and, instead of bread, they use the mescales, which are here much more juicy than the manfos of California. Along the shore are found, among other shells, some of the azure kind, of a most exquisite beauty. In this sea likewise are seen whales, which the Indians often kill with harpoons.

From the high mountain in the island, you have a view of two other small islands lying to the westward, at the distance of 8 or 10 leagues. There are also in the large bay of San Xavier, three other small islands, the haunts only of sea-wolves and beavers. To all these islands, the father gave the name of Los Dolores. Further to the northward, they saw other large islands, which appear to be three days sailing beyond the bay. It was believed, that those were the islands which formed the channel of Santa Barbara, and that the first of them was surveyed by captain Viscaino, and called Santa Catalina ; but these islands lay at such a distance, that it was impossible to count their number, or describe their situation.

The inhabitants of Amalgua know nothing of these islands, the old forcerers strictly prohibiting, not only an intercourse with their inhabitants, but even their looking towards them. The few inhabitants
they

they found, were easily persuaded to come to San Ignacio, in order to be instructed in the christian religion. The only one that opposed it was a forcerer; and they were for leaving him alone on the island, his very wife intending to go with the rest. But seeing them all preparing to depart, his obstinacy abated, and he at last consented to make one of the company. Foul weather obliged them to put in at the desert island of Afegua, where they were obliged to stay several days; but on the return of fair weather, they made for the continent, meeting only with one misfortune, which happened in the following manner. As they were coasting along the shore, they saw on the sand banks, a great number of sea-wolves; and the Indian forcerer, who was continually betraying his discontent, relying on his dexterity, leaped into the water, and swam towards the banks, in order to kill a wolf, but they all retired at his approach. The Indian, on this, endeavoured to return to the bark, but as he was swimming back, a shark, in sight of the whole company, seized him: however, by an extraordinary activity, natural to these people, he cleared himself, tho' wounded, and threw blood at the shark, by way of sport; but the voracious fish seized him a second time, with insuperable violence, and at once darted

down with him to the bottom ; his companions, tho' very much affected, not being able to help him.

No mention is made of these small islands, comprehended under the new name of Los Dolores, in the narrative of capt. Sebastian Viscaino's voyage ; either because his squadron had no sight of them, possibly, passing by them in the night ; or, in his course from the harbour of San Diego, to the new bay, lately called San Xavier, he kept at too great a distance from the coast. Opposite to this bay, the captain, in his passage to Puerto de Monte Rey, had a view of the island, which he called Santa Cathalina ; and the others which formed the channel of Santa Barbara. Of these islands, all the account and information which father Taraval could get, was only a distant view, which he took of it from the mountain in the island of Amalgua. For neither its inhabitants, nor those of cape San Xavier, have any intercourse with the inhabitants of this island, nor with those of the continent, on the other side of the bay. We have already seen, part I. sect. VII. how different father Taraval's accounts of the belief, religion, and rites of the islanders of Amalgua, are from those in captain Viscaino's relation, in the same particulars, among the islanders of Santa Cathalina.

It

It would indeed be very proper to take a more accurate survey of those islands, which were seen by captain Viscaino, and likewise of the coasts of the continent, as far as the Sierra de Santa Lucia, which the Philippine ships have sight of; for he found the people very tractable, tho he was not able to stay with them. But however desirable such a survey may be, it has hitherto been found impossible to be taken, on account of the great distance betwixt the mission of San Ignacio, and the channel of Santa Barbara.

The time was now arrived for father Taraval, by order of father Clement Guillen, the new visitor, to found the mission of Santa Rosa, his first destination in the bay of Palmas, near the cape of California; and like the mission of San Joseph of cape San Lucas, inhabited by the Coras. This mission was necessary as the Coras of those parts could not be superintended from the mission of San Jago tho' the nearest, both as the greatest part of this mission were Guaycuros, but chiefly as the savage, turbulent, and deceitful humour of these Indians required a greater number of missionaries; and their continual presence at their residences, in order to secure the reduction of them, and prevent rebellions: for which however such prudent measures did not prove sufficient. Ac-

cordingly, every thing necessary for the new foundation being provided at Loretto, father Sigismund went to the bay of La Paz; and thence to the mission of St. Jago at Palmas bay; near which his new mission was begun on the spot, where, some years before, father Napoli had laid the foundation of that of St. Jago. The Indians of this coast he found civilized beyond expectation, which was partly owing to the diligence of father Napoli, and partly to some visits which the fathers Carranco and Tamaral had paid them from their missions. But some of the Indians who were wedded to their beastly manner of living, made such oppositions to his measures, that it would have been highly imprudent to have dismissed the three soldiers that attended him. His assiduity and address were however so remarkable, that before the conclusion of the year, he had baptized the greater part of the gentiles within his district, of every age: and to their affection and fidelity he owed his life in the general revolt of the nation. There had appeared some intimations of this revolt in the two missions of St. Jago and San Joseph, in the same year 1733, and beginning of 1734. The Indian governor of San Jago, by the Indians called Boton, who had been promoted to that post, because of his interest with his countrymen, on

account

account of his superior capacity, and as born of a Mulatto and an Indian.

It was also thought that by laying an obligation on him to behave as became a christian, he would abhor his way of living; but in this they were mistaken, for he returned to his former excesses; and as private exhortations were of no consequence, it was necessary to give him a publick reprimand. This also had no effect; so that father Carranco thought it necessary to depose him and chastise him publickly. This instead of bringing him to a sense of his guilt, filled him with such rancour, that he frequently attempted to spirit up the new christians to kill the father; and being joined by some discontented Indians, he would certainly have succeeded, had not the father, on timely advice of his intention, been on his guard. This seduction, however threw the whole mission into a flame. And the cessation of these disturbances was principally owing to his departure to the rancherias of San Joseph del Cabo, which were still gentiles: the chief of one of these was a Mulatto named Chicori; who lived in an abandoned manner, with a great number of wives. Among these was a young woman, who, on coming to the mission, was instructed by father Tamaral: and after she became a christian, was robbed, and forcibly

carried away by the Mulatto to Yeneca, the name of the rancheria. But the father to avoid still greater evils, winked at this enormity for some time; but having at last an opportunity of going to Yeneca, he mildly complained to the Mulatto of the robbery. The other haughtily answered that she was his wife, and therefore he had a right to bring her away: the father replied that if she had been his only one he would not have detained her in the mission, nor proceeded to baptize her so soon; but that having many others, it was unjust to force the young woman back. He proceeded to exhort him also to become a christian, and painted the turpitude of that sloth and debauchery in which he lived, in the most glaring colours. In short the father tried every method to induce him to embrace the christian faith; but the Indian grew more obdurate; and fearing to be forsaken by others of his wives, he determined to murder the father the first opportunity, and stir up the Californians to destroy all missionaries.

Such were the sentiments of the Mulatto Chicori, when the perverse Boton, with no better design, came to his rancheria, having left the Indians of the mission of San Jago in a great ferment. The plots of both being unknown to the missionaries, father Tamaral came without the least apprehension from cape San Lucas

Lu
difi
sen
wit
ma
fath
turn
lity
happ
retu
some
to c
were
bodi
firme
priv
coun
mess
catec
imme
enem
armed
ral's
oppos
what
After
by his
tiles, n
withou

Lucas to assist father Carranco in quieting the disturbances of the mission, which, by the absence of the incendiary Boton, was not attended with any great difficulty; so that by the good management and prudent conduct of the two fathers, all animosities ceased, the Indians returned to their former obedience, and tranquillity was again restored. Things being thus happily settled, father Tamaral was desirous of returning to his mission of San Joseph; but some faithful Indians of San Jago advised him to defer his journey, for Boton and Chicori were waiting for him in certain parts with two bodies of men. The disagreeable news was confirmed by some Indians, whom the fathers sent privately to reconnoitre these places. This account being confirmed, father Tamaral sent messages by other roads to his christians and catechumens of San Joseph, that they should immediately arm and march in quest of the enemy, who, on seeing such numbers coming armed, hid themselves; so that father Tamaral's faithful parishioners finding no body to oppose him, burnt their arbours, after taking what wretched plunder they found in them. After this expedition father Tamaral, escorted by his Indians, of whom many were still gentiles, returned to his mission of cape San Lucas, without meeting with the least disturbance from

the

the seditious Californians : and the two heads of the conspiracy, seeing their followers extremely diminished, thought proper on the miscarriage of their design, lest both missions should fall on them, to make their submission.

Accordingly, they begged for peace, and promised a suitable behaviour for the future. The fathers who laboured entirely for their conversion, readily consented. And in the beginning of the year 1734, a peace was concluded with great rejoicings. But this peace, which had at first all the appearance of being lasting, was of very short continuance.

This defection of the Californians and other smaller disturbances, with which the fathers saw themselves every day menaced, by the pride of the Indians, and the practices of those whom, on account of their brutish excesses, there was a necessity of correcting, arose chiefly from the want of an escorte of soldiers, and of a garrison in the bay de La Paz, or some other part betwixt it and cape San Lucas, to which recourse might have been had in case of necessity. The fathers had only one soldier for a guard; and at the time of these tumults were without any; the garrison consisting of so few, and the necessity of supplying other new missions on the frontiers of the gentiles, not permitting any to remain in these missions. The garrison of

Loretto,

Loretto
from
to the
tion o
more
And th
Bravo
vicero
for secu
ward :
cording
defeated
tioned,

The Ph
time
pany
The
marty
Fathe
destr

No fo
with the
intention
And soon
some Ind
Lucas, c

Loretto, which was above one hundred leagues from hence, could be of no service; besides to the factious, fickle, and treacherous disposition of the Pericues, such a check was much more necessary than to the northern Indians. And this was the reason which induced father Bravo to move the marquis de Valero the viceroy to form a new garrison at La Paz, for securing the remaining part to the southward: and though at first a resolution was accordingly taken, yet this salutary purpose was defeated in the manner we have already mentioned.

S E C T. XIX.

The Philippine galleon comes for the first time to cape San Lucas. The ships company are refreshed, and the sick cured. The fathers Carranco and Tamaral suffer martyrdom by the hands of the Pericues. Father Taraval escapes. Four millions destroyed.

No sooner had the peace been concluded with the rebels than they openly confessed their intention of massacring all the missionaries. And soon after, in the month of January 1734, some Indians who had been fishing off cape San Lucas, came running to the seat of the mission

sion of San Joseph, with news that a very large ship was come thither. The father sent other Indians for a more particular account: but on their arrival the ship was under sail, tho' within sight. And soon after they saw her stand in and come to an anchor in San Bernabé bay, where a party of men with fire arms came ashore for water. A young man of Loretto who had been sent by the father, went up and spoke with the seamen. From them he understood that the ship he saw, was the Philippine galleon; and he informed them that there was a new mission erected in the neighbourhood; on which the people shewed a great deal of joy, and went immediately to make a report of it to don Geronimo Montero, captain of the galleon. The ship, at making the cape, had only water for two days, the rains by which they are supplied in their passage from Manila to Acapulco having in a great measure failed: and this had obliged them to touch at the harbour joining to cape San Lucas; but finding it too small, stood into San Bernabé's bay. But their want of water was not the only misfortune that obliged them to put in here; a great many were down with the scurvy, the only remedy for which is to be removed on shore, and live upon pitahayas, acid fruits, and fresh meat: which the Indians generally barter for other things. Father Tamaral being

being
stand
shore
cattle
to g
fruits
taking
ment
people
acqu
order
tahay
every
comin
by the
casks
partoo
was ac
ness a
whole
thanks
extraor
some g
able, th
patients
the pita
the tim
far gone
cessity c

being made acquainted with these circumstances by his Indians, immediately went to the shore, ordering that the greatest part of the cattle should be brought thither; and likewise to gather as many pitahayas, and other wild fruits and berries as could be found. After taking these measures, he sent his compliments to the captain, with an offer to assist his people with whatever his poor mission afforded; acquainting him, at the same time, with the order he had given for the fresh meat and pitahayas for those who had the scurvy; and every thing was immediately sent aboard on its coming to the shore. The Indians, encouraged by the father, helped the seamen in filling their casks with water; and all who came on shore partook of the father's welcome charity, which was accompanied with the most winning sweetness and courtesy. The captain, with the whole ship's company, formally returned their thanks to the missionary; and, in return for his extraordinary kindness, sent him a present of some goods. This refreshment was so seasonable, that, of the great number of scorbutick patients, all recovered by the known remedy of the pitahayas, fresh meat, and being ashore during the time of watering. Three indeed were so far gone in the distemper, that there was a necessity of leaving them in California. These

were

were don Joseph Francisco de Baytos, captain of marines, don Antonio de Herrera, boatswain of the galleon, and the most reverend father, Domingo de Horbigoso, of the order of San Augustine, who was going to Mexico, as president of the hospital of Santo Thomas de Villa Nueva, and agent general in New Spain for his province of the Philippine islands. These three, on their coming ashore, were in so deplorable a condition, that, notwithstanding the poverty of the mission, they determined to continue there, committing themselves to the charity of father Tamaral; to whom the captain in a letter recommended them all; and the father commissary Mathias de Ibarra, in a particular manner, father Horbigoso of the same order. The captain also wrote to father Tamaral, that as a mission was now founded, near cape San Lucas, and the Indians converted to the catholick faith, the Philippine ships, for the future, would always put in there, as he would procure orders for that purpose from the government, having so recently experienced the necessity of touching at that port, the only one in the whole passage from Manila to Acapulco, both for watering, the recovery of the sick, and refreshment of the healthy; desiring that there might, in the following years, be a greater quantity of cattle

cat
pur
care
com
nab
T
care
could
most
more
for hi
his ov
of the
that t
provisi
strange
the sea
diligen
rous di
was se
being a
tal. T
all the c
proceed
Baytos,
liver th
in New
of this
upon his

cattle and provisions kept in readiness for those purposes. This the father promised should be carefully observed; and the watering being completed, the galleon sailed from San Bernabé bay with a fair wind.

The three patients who remained under the care of father Tamaral, found every thing they could desire for their cure and relief. The most tender mother could not exert herself more for a favourite son, than the father did for his three patients. He not only expended his own store, but sent to request of the fathers of the other missions in the neighbourhood, that they would spare him the best of their provisions for the relief of these three distressed strangers. He spent the days and nights at the seat of his mission; and by his skill and diligence all three recovered from that dangerous distemper. But don Antonio de Herrera was seized with another distemper, which, being augmented by the scurvy, proved mortal. The father buried him in his church, with all the decency the place would admit of, and proceeded to take an inventory before captain Baytos, and father Horbigoso, in order to deliver them, that they might execute his will in New Spain. Such was the noble temper of this father, that they could not prevail upon him to accept of the least gratuity for his
care

care of the deceased, tho' it was his express will. Thus he will for ever remain a remarkable instance of disinterestedness, which in America is still more singular and admirable, the fatal thirst of riches being there more vehement, that absurd passion, which renders men incapable of enjoying their present possessions, or of ceasing from the laborious pursuits, after that which they never will know how to enjoy.

Father Horbigoso, charmed with such benevolence and disinterestedness, has perpetuated it by the very honourable mention he makes of the father in his account of the galleon's voyage. He wrote it at the mission of San Joseph : but it overflows with such affectionate gratitude and sublime encomiums on the society and father Tamaral, that modesty will not allow me to insert it here. It is sufficient for the reputation of the father to copy the latter part of his panegyrick : " therefore the Philippines have just cause to be thankful for having guided them to this city of refuge, and its so benevolent and disinterested a ruler, by whom all their wants were liberally supplied. And it would be very proper that a vessel built in the same manner as those for making signals, should be sent hither, both for the greater dispatch in watering and supplying the galleon, and for the more speedy

speedy conveyance of such passengers as are sent ashore sick and afterwards recover, to the harbour of La Paz, and from thence over to the opposite side: for otherwise I am of opinion that these services, tho' of the greatest importance, will be attended with prodigious difficulties and delays, there being no timber for building such a vessel."

This was the first time since the beginning of the reduction of California by father Salva-Tierra, that the Philippine ship had touched there. Father Tamaral, whom the viceroy, the marquis de Valero had so strictly charged to go in quest of a proper port, and who accordingly in his mission of La Purissima had without any success used the endeavours which we have already related, had now the pleasure of seeing the said ship come to his mission, and of refreshing the seamen and passengers in the manner above mentioned.

Don Geronymo Montero, on his arrival at Mexico, made a report of his voyage to the viceroy: and tho' orders were given that the ships in the succeeding years, should make use of so commodious a port, there being no other all along the northern coast of the South sea; yet this account was not generally approved of in New Spain, by those, who, through private interest, looked with a jealous eye on the trade

to the Philippine islands; and on every measure which tended to its conveniency and increase; and likewise by others who also from selfish motives opposed the missions of California. The warm disputes then on foot relating to the tonnage and cargo of the galleon in her voyage out and home, diverted the thoughts of many from the more exalted considerations of the common good; the great conveniency of the harbour had been proved from experience in the late voyage: it seemed proper to secure it; and with it the missions and missionaries in the south of California; by erecting the new garrison according to his majesty's express orders. This was now earnestly solicited at Mexico: and this favourable juncture seemed to promise a happy issue; but petitions so well founded had no effect; and the missionaries and missions remained exposed and undefended as before.

At Manila, indeed, it was ordered that the galleon should touch at cape San Lucas, which she did the following year, as we shall mention in its proper place: for captain Montero returning to Manila before the ship sailed, this article was added to his instructions.

In the mean time father Horbigoso and captain Baytos, were by the care of father Tamaral entirely recovered: and on advice of this, a vessel came from La Paz to cape San Lucas,
in

in order to carry them to La Paz bay; whence in April they proceeded in a bark to Matanchel, and from thence to Mexico. The fathers continued their labours with the indocible savages of the south; father Tamaral in St. Joseph; father Carranco in St. Jago; father Taraval in Santa Rosa; father Clemente Guillen appointed visitor and superior of Dolores; and father Gordon at el Pilar de la Paz. The latter in the summer of the same year 1734, was obliged to go to Loretto, to hasten the supplies for his mission and the others in the south, leaving it to the care of his safe-guard don Manuel Andres Romero. The christian Indians and catechumens to appearance behaved very quietly, excepting some small ferments which were easily allayed; and there seemed no reason to apprehend any thing from the gentiles: but under the ashes of this apparent tranquility, the fire of a general rebellion was gathering head; and in the autumn of the same year it burst out to the total destruction of four missions, and the imminent danger of all.

This dreadful rebellion, as appeared afterwards, did not arise from any particular motive or irritating accident; the origin of the rancour of the Indians against the fathers, being no other than their aversion to the new doctrine, which deprived them of their plurality of wives,

and required them to live in a regularity and decency incompatible with their brutish licentiousness. This afterwards sufficiently appeared; and the principal incendiaries owned it. The destructive plot was first formed in the rancherias towards the south coast betwixt St. Jago and St. Joseph, by the insidious suggestions of Boton and Chicori, who either were never sincerely reconciled, or soon reassumed their former hatred and malignancy against the fathers. And that they might not be disturbed in their excesses by new reprimands, they resolved at once to shake off the yoke of the missionaries. The conspiracy, with singular dissimulation and secrecy, spread itself among several rancherias of all the five southern missions: and the mutinous party increased every where, without the missionaries having the least suspicion of it. When they thought themselves sufficiently strong, being joined by many new converts, who however came to the exercises and meals at the missions, they consulted on putting their design in execution. All they feared was the soldiers, on account of their fire-arms; tho' the number of these was very small, father Taraval having at Santa Rosa, though a mission newly founded, but three; at La Paz there was only one; at St Jago, two invalid Mestizos of New Spain supplied the place of soldiers;

soldiers; and St. Joseph del Cabo was without any. This obstacle they endeavoured to remove by stratagem; and in the beginning of September, meeting with one of the soldiers which accompanied father Taraval, they came on him unawares and murdered him. Some of them went to the father, telling him that there was a soldier suddenly taken ill in the wood; and desired that he would come to confess him, or send some soldier to bring him: but besides the oddness of the message, they betrayed such a confusion, that the father, who had received some vague intelligence of the conspiracy, knew what they had done, and by questioning them close, came to discover, that there actually was a design on foot for murdering the father and the soldiers by dividing their strength, and drawing him aside from his Indians. For this reason he declined going or sending a second soldier; and soon after the murder of the former reached his ears. Within some days they killed at La Paz don Manuel Andres Romero; and the fact for some days remained a secret. These successes increased the insolence of the conspirators, so that now the rebellion became more visible, especially in the territory of St. Jago; yet the missionaries did not consider it as any thing more than what was usual in new missions.

About this time a soldier of Loretto came to the mission of St. Joseph del Cabo, as a safeguard to father Tamaral, and likewise to bleed and assist him, the wants and labours of the missionary having brought on him a dangerous disease. The soldier had observed some signs of rebellion in the territory of St. Jago; and saw them confirmed by others in that of St. Joseph. He acquainted father Tamaral of this: and resolutely told him that the danger was too great to stay there any longer, and that he would take upon him to carry him safe to La Paz. The father full of that intrepidity common to a native of Seville, endeavoured to remove the soldier's apprehensions, but he answered that he would not stay there to perish; and as he could not bring the father into his measures, he left him to himself, and made the best of his way to La Paz; and when within a proper distance of that place he discharged his piece as the usual signal, but no answer was made: on this he walked up to the house and called aloud to the soldier, but still there was no answer, nor could he see any Indian of whom to enquire: but on going into the house he saw some traces of blood, the portmanteau empty, and some fragments of utensils and furniture scattered up and down the floor. Judging from these evident signs that Romero the soldier had been murdered,

den
Do
Gu
dan
was
che
a g
off
of t
thre
lores
from
certa
ing
orde
ters,
ther
know
to ha
selve
ders
too l
sent
faith
Josep
evid
that,
he w

dered, he immediately fled to the mission of Dolores which was above sixty leagues distant.

Here he acquainted the superior father Guillen of the disaster he had seen, and of the danger of the other missionaries. The father was not entirely unapprized of this, some rancherias of his mission having been disturbed by a gang of the conspirators, who forcibly carried off several Indians. But on the intelligence of the soldier, he dispatched messengers to the three fathers, that they should withdraw to Dolores. Soon after letters were brought him from father Carranco informing him, that a certain discovery had been made of a plot breaking out among the Pericues, and desired his orders. Father Guillen sent away fresh letters, that they should all go to La Paz, whither he sent a canoe with seventeen Indians of known fidelity; but neither of the letters came to hand, the conspirators having possessed themselves of all the passes; and even had those orders reached them, probably it would have been too late. At the same time father Carranco sent a body of christians in all appearance very faithful, to father Tamaral at the mission of St. Joseph, advising him of the commotions and evident signs of a general plot, entreating him that, being alone, and without a safeguard, he would come to his mission, where they

might consult on the best measures to be taken in such a critical juncture. Father Tamaral sent him for answer, that in his mission no such signs had appeared; that he looked on those apprehensions to be partly owing to the timidity of those who brought such information; and partly to the wiles of the common enemy for disturbing them and impeding the labours of the missions; that he trusted in God whom he desired to serve both in life and death; but did not think himself worthy of martyrdom, nor in such dangerous circumstances as would justify his abandoning his mission, especially as in the former disturbances his people had given evident proofs of their fidelity. This letter was afterwards found among the broken remnants of father Carranco's effects. Father Tamaral thus remained alone in his mission, having dismissed the Indians sent from St. Jago. These on their return from the mission of St. Joseph fell in with some parties of the rebels, who asked them from whence and from whom they came. They answered that they had gone by father Carranco's direction to father Tamaral in order to bring him to St. Jago: for the father, added they, already knows of your designs to kill them: the boy in his house who tells him every thing, gave him notice of it. The intention

tenti
Tam
proc
tirpa
heari
with
and
not e
open
who,
ening
God
ing t
away

Th
Frida
seven
Carr
retire
ber.
two
the v
before
the o
techu
theles
tho' a
whilst
habita

tention of the rebels was first to murder father Tamaral, as quite defenceless; and then to proceed to the other missions: hoping to extirpate the fathers out of the peninsula. But hearing that father Carranco was acquainted with their design, they altered their measures; and went to dispatch him first, that he might not escape, or send for any soldiers. This they openly mentioned to the christians of St. Jago, who, after a few solicitations mixed with threatenings, contrary to the fidelity they owed to God and the father, joined the rebels, directing their course to St. Jago in order to take away the life of their best benefactor.

They came to the seat of the mission on Friday the first of October, betwixt six and seven in the morning, when father Lorenzo Carranco had just concluded mass, and was retired to other devotional offices in his chamber. Their first question was, whether the two Mestizos, the father's guards, were in the village: and were informed that a little before, they went out to fetch two beasts for the ordinary expence of the missions, the catechumens, children, old men, &c. Nevertheless the foreign conspirators fearing the father, tho' alone, kept at a distance from the house, whilst some of their messengers who were inhabitants of the mission, went in under pretence

tence of making a report of their proceedings. The father who was then on his knees, at their coming in, arose and received them very affectionately. He expressed his wonder that father Tamara! was not come with them, and asked if they brought no letter: they said yes; and gave it to him. Upon which he began to read it; but when he was most absorbed in attention, the whole body of conspirators rushed suddenly into the house, and two of them falling on the father, seized him and dragged him out between the house and the church, where those two held him by his gown, while the others stabbed him with arrows: the father in the mean time sending up fervent ejaculations to heaven, and offering to God for his own faults, and those of his Indians, the pure sacrifice of his life. The cowardly wretches, when they saw there was nothing to fear, finished their bloody purpose with sticks and stones. In the mean time one of them happening to cast his eye towards the house, and seeing in it the little Indian boy who waited on the father, crying bitterly for the cruel usage of his dear master, said to him, what do you cry for? now go and tell the father what is doing in the rancherías. Another added; since he loved the father, it is reasonable he should go and keep him company. Then taking him by the feet, they dashed his head against the

the walls of the house, and the floor, and when he was dead, threw him to the place where the others were stoning and beating the cold body of the venerable Carranco.

The noise of these violent proceedings brought together the Indians of both sexes and all ages: and though some were displeased with such inhumanity, they could not with safety interpose, especially as among the murderers, they observed some of the principal of the mission, who, as such, had been pitched upon for escorting father Tamaral from St. Joseph. Here the giddy disposition of the Indians was such, that they, who in the morning had joined in devotions with the father, now shared all the rancour and fury of the others against him: and thus whilst some heaped wood together for burning him, others dragged towards the pile his bloody and disfigured body, in which still remained some signs of life. Here they stripped him not so much for the sake of his cloaths, as by their execrable insults to revenge the freedom with which he had reproved their beastialities. The several shocking enormities they practised on his breathless corps, together with their abominable scurrilities before they committed it to the flames, are best passed over in silence! only observing that their barbarity and brutal insults evidently shewed, that the great
object

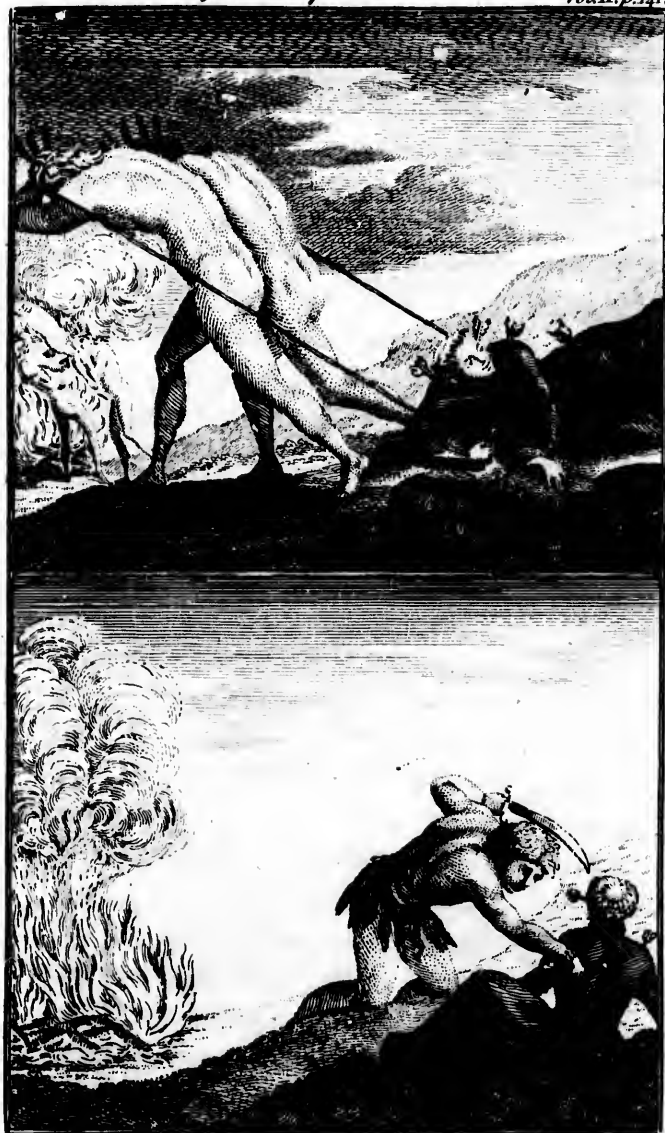
object of their rage and malignity was the doctrine newly introduced by the father; especially as it required chastity and moderation. Thus amidst shouts, outrages, and execrations, the bodies of Lorenzo Carranco and his little servant were thrown into the fire. After which they proceeded to pillage the house and church, keeping the cloaths and such furniture as could be of use, the rest they burnt: crucifixes, pictures, statues of saints, the altar, chalice, missal, and other sacred things were thrown into the fire, as a sure sign of their hatred of religion. The bodies and furniture of the church were burning amidst the wild exultations of the Indians, when the two domesticks of the father came in sight, bringing with them the two beasts which they had gone out to fetch, but with no other arms than their knives. The Indians immediately getting about them bid them alight and kill the beasts, tho' this was more than they durst do, there was no time for objections: but they had no sooner performed this office than the Indians let fly at them a shower of arrows, and while they continued in the agonies of death, threw them into the same fire.

After perpetrating these cruelties at St. Jago, the murderers went to the mission of St. Joseph del Cabo de San Lucas. But were now accompanied by a much greater number of people

s the do-
; espec-
deration.
ecrations,
his little
ter which
church,
as could
xes, pic-
e, missal,
into the
f religi-
church
ns of the
e father
the two
out with
Indians
n alight
ore than
ections:
is office
wer of
he ago-
e fire.
t. Jago,
Joseph
ow ac-
ber of
people

The Martyrdom of Father Carranco.

Vol. II. p. 141.



The Martyrdom of Father Samarat.

pec
 bei
 bef
 whi
 sion
 Thi
 hou
 thir
 of o
 part
 lent
 Cali
 his
 for f
 migh
 The
 all a
 inter
 child
 tent
 of th
 ing t
 who
 Carra
 then
 wher
 comi
 throa
 self u

people than at St. Jago, the assault there being before the time appointed ; whereas now, besides those who joined them at St. Jago, which was the far greater number of the mission, others flocked to them from all parts. This infernal company came to the father's house at eight in the morning on Sunday the third of October, being the festival of the rosary of our lady. He was sitting quietly in his apartment without any apprehension of such violent designs, when a party of the seditious Californians, consisting of the very Indians of his mission broke in upon him, all calling out for something, that if he denied them, they might have an occasion of quarreling with him. The father from their disorder, and seeing them all armed, immediately knew their execrable intentions. However he mildly answered, " stay children ; there is enough in the house to content you all." Seeing themselves disappointed of their pretence for resentment, without staying to contrive any further artifice, the Indians, who at St. Jago had first laid hands on father Carranco, now knocked down father Tamaral ; then dragged him by the feet out of his house, where some arrows were shot at him ; but all coming up they thought it better to cut his throat with one of the knives which he himself used to distribute to them for their necessities,

sities. Thus, they who a little before had not courage to kill two harmless beasts, now, inflamed by the sanguinary spirit of cruelty, murdered their pastor, who, by innumerable benefits, endeavoured to bring them to a life of purity; when dying, he recommended himself and his flock to the good shepherd of the human race, whose name he continued invoking with his last breath. This cruel action was followed by those abominable insults on his body, which they had practised at St. Jago: but at St. Joseph the festivity was greater and lasted longer; for here were present multitudes of people of all ages: and besides, being now free from any apprehensions of the two fathers, they could celebrate their villainies in all the brutish licentiousness, with which in the time of their infidelity they used to solemnize their victories.

To this delay however was owing the life of father Sigismund Taraval, missionary of Santa Rosa now assisting at the village of Todos Santos. At the time they were killing and burning father Carranco and his boy, a lad of this village happened to be at St. Jago, and on seeing what passed returned to Todos Santos, whilst the rebels went to St. Joseph. At this place the boy gave an account of all he had seen to an honest old man, who immediately taking

taki
Tar
add
sent
to d
carr
safe
from
deat
had
they
here
the f
fathe
was
who
frou
fathe
prov
his g
of th
Octo
the
ornam
tion,
ther
intell
and i
wher

taking the boy with him, found out father Taraval; and having made him tell the story, added, "take care, father, for they'll be presently here to kill you; it is out of our power to defend you: but if you are willing, we will carry you over to that island where you'll be safe." Soon after came some other Indians from Santa Rosa, who had been present at the death of father Tamaral at St. Joseph: and had hastened to sustain their missionary, that they had already sent messengers to their adherents at La Paz, who had murdered Romero the soldier, that they should proceed to dispatch father Taraval and his servant. This message was owing to the cowardice of the insurgents, who, from the dread of the fire arms, were desirous of leaving the assault to others. On this father Taraval, thought it his duty to make provision for saving his own life, and that of his guards: accordingly, he took the furniture of the altar, and on the night of the 4th of October, retired to La Paz bay unperceived by the enemy; and taking also from thence the ornaments and consecrated utensils of that mission, he went on board the boat which the father visitor Guillen had sent pursuant to the intelligence he received from father Carranco, and in it he sailed to the island del Spiritu Santo; where soon after another boat arrived with men

and provisions from Loretto: and with these succours father Taraval was enabled to set out immediately for the mission of Dolores, for preventing their intentions against this settlement; and at the same time to concert measures for restoring tranquility to the missions in the southern parts. The weather proving fine, father Taraval with al. his company happily arrived at Dolores, where he found father Guillen overwhelmed with grief at these shocking cruelties. He had heard only of the death of father Carranco; but his grief knew no bounds when he was informed of the murder of father Tamaral and the utter ruin of all the four missions of St. Jago, St. Joseph, Santa Rosa and el Pilar de la Paz. Their discourses chiefly related to the most proper measures to be taken in this dismal state of affairs: but during these conferences the Pericues and C. s had posted from St. Joseph del Cabo to the village of Todos Santos in quest of father Taraval, as those of La Paz had not engaged in the rebellion. But on hearing that he had made his escape, they turned their rage against the neighbouring Indians, and falling on them unawares, killed twenty seven christians, the rest escaping by flight. These violences were succeeded by quarrels among themselves, which broke out into petty wars, the

ranche-

ranco
treac
verfi

All t
no
ren
Ya
for
for
gall
goe
Juli
quic
San

On
actions,
nia, wre
ety, and
tonio B
ened the
should f
might be
the dama
to the ra
VOL. I

rancherias attacking each other with all the treachery and fury, practised before their conversion to christianity.

S E C T. XX.

All the missionaries, from a mistrust of the northern Indians, retire to Loretto. A remarkable instance of fidelity of the Yaquis. Measures taken by the fathers for pacifying the southern Indians. Misfortune which attended the Philippine galleon. The governor of Cinaloa goes to CALIFORNIA. Death of father Julian de Mayorga. The Pericues are quieted, and a new garrison settled at San Lucas.

On the first advice of these shocking transactions, father Guillen, as superior of California, wrote to the other superiors of the society, and likewise to the viceroy don Juan Antonio Bizarro; that the ruin which threatened the other missions, if the northern Indians should follow the example of the southern, might be prevented; measures taken to supply the damages already sustained, and a stop put to the ravages of the rebel Pericues. But his

excellency did not think that the insurrection of the Indians, the murder of the missionaries and soldiers, the ruin of the four missions, and the imminent danger of the other settlements soldiers and missionaries, were sufficient to warrant any extraordinary expences in behalf of California. And on the 8th of December of the same year 1734, he sent for answer to the father visitor Guillen, "That, sensible of the dangers to which those missions were exposed, and of their great importance to religion and the king, he would with pleasure concur with the fathers in any report or account they should judge convenient, and would use his utmost interest with his majesty, that all those measures might be pursued which tended to promote such useful undertakings: adding, that if he could obtain a warrant from his majesty, he would endeavour to execute it in its full extent." The good dispositions which appeared in this letter, afforded no manner of relief in the present exigency. In the mean time the rebellion increased, and some signs of disturbances broke out in the territory of the mission of Dolores. The captain on the first account repaired thither with some soldiers from the southern missions, where he found father Taraval, by whom he was informed of the above mentioned disasters, the ruin of the mis-

sion
was
again
espec
be re
missio
distric
order
nation
the ne
vainly
vernme
But
passed
of the
one ran
languag
stood w
though
leagues.
many,
living,
the fathe
adding,
able to
and a br
to do th
likewise
they did

sions, and the inscience of the Indians. As it was not prudent to venture a handful of men against such numbers flushed with success, especially as the Californians were so little to be relied on, he thought proper to stop at the mission of Dolores, to keep the Indians of that district in order, and there face the rebels in order to cut off their communication with other nations, that the fire might not spread among the northern missions, till the assistance they vainly expected, should arrive from the government of Mexico.

But by degrees the knowledge of what had passed in the south, reached the furthest extent of the conquests; and the news passing from one rancheria to another, though of different languages, the Indians of San Ignacio understood what had happened at cape San Lucas, though at the distance of above two hundred leagues. This inflamed the vicious passions of many, who, disgusted at the new manner of living, secretly spread malicious reports against the fathers, who had abolished their old customs: adding, that if the Indians of the south had been able to destroy them, they, as more numerous and a braver people, should find it an easy task to do the like. These seditious murmurs were likewise heard in other missions; and though they did not infect the principal Indians, who

on the contrary faithfully gave notice to the missionaries of what was intended; but, at the same time desired that a large guard might be sent them against any emergency, their soldiers being very much dispirited. They were indeed greatly intimidated by their comrades being killed by the Pericues, and the opinion that prevailed at Loretto, that the whole nation of California was going to rise. And the father visitor Guillen, not being able to assist them with a sufficient guard, wrote in the beginning of the year 1735, to all the missionaries requiring them by virtue of his authority, to quit the missions and all repair to Loretto; that by the protection of the garrison they might save their lives. Their compliance with this order was at first not perceived by the Indians, as they successively withdrew according to the time of receiving the letters. It must be acknowledged that this command of the superior saved the lives of the missionaries: for the flame of rebellion spread with such rapidity among those unthinking barbarians, tho' of better intellects and dispositions than the Pericues, that had not the removal been made so very seasonably, all California would probably have been lost for ever.

The missionaries being now retired to Loretto, and the missions of the north forsaken,
father

father
ico of t
Californ
all sides
ther Bra
bark to
vernour
with the
would in
and some
order to
solutely u
nations o
the south
arrived a
same year
Spain im
viceroy, a
suitable m
nothing w
recourse to
by a ship
father G
Mexico, a
court for
before his
might be
ple, provi
had very l

father Guillen again sent an account to Mexico of the terrible condition of the missions of California ; and the imminent danger which on all sides surrounded them at the same time. Father Bravo, the missionary of Loretto, sent the bark to the river Yaqui with letters to the governor and missionary jesuits, acquainting them with the general danger, and desiring that they would immediately send sixty Indian warriors, and some exercised persons with fire-arms, in order to protect their lives, as they were absolutely unable to quell the Indians, should the nations of the north, the middle parts, and the south, join in a league. These advices arrived at Mexico on the 13th of April the same year : and though the provincial of New Spain immediately delivered the letters to the viceroy, and in two memorials urged him to take suitable measures on so important a juncture, nothing was done. This obliged him to have recourse to his majesty, sending letters to Europe by a ship then just ready to sail. Accordingly, father Gaspar Rodero formerly provincial of Mexico, and at that time agent general at court for the Indian provinces, laid the affair before his majesty. But the assistance which might be naturally expected from civilized people, providence provided among savages, who had very lately been gentiles. The Yaqui na-

tion who had always given the noblest proofs of their fidelity, maintained their character in this juncture. For no sooner was the report spread in their country than above five hundred warriors came down armed from their villages to the river, in order to embark for the relief of California. But as the bilander was too small to carry so many, they picked out among themselves sixty, and the others, that they might not be without some share in the enterprise, gave them their bows and arrows for arming the faithful Indians of the peninsula. The bilander immediately sailed, and landed them near Loretto, and from thence they marched to Dolores, where they found the captain of the garriſon : for at their arrival the tranquillity of the north, had been reſtored by a remarkable action of thoſe new chriſtians.

As ſoon as the leading men among them were informed that the fathers with the interpreters and foldiers were miſſing, and had carried away with them the ornaments and furnitures of the churches, they were ſenſible of the cauſe of their retreat : and being greatly affected with it, agreed by reciprocal meſſages to meet and repair to Loretto. Accordingly they ſet out, ſome of them carrying on their ſhoulders the croſſes of the miſſions of San Ignacio, Nueſtra Sennora de Guadalupe, and Santa Roſalia ;

Rosalia : and thus in a regular procession entered the garrison, intreating the fathers with floods of tears, that as they had baptized and instructed them in the christian religion, they would not now leave them to perish and return to their former crimes, their sincere desire being to live and die christians : adding that it was unjust for the whole nation to suffer for the faults of a few ; especially as they were willing to deliver up to punishment, all who had either spoke or acted amiss, and would undertake to protect the fathers, and convey them safe to the captain of the garrison : but if the fathers were not inclined to return to their country they would settle at Loretto ; being determined not to live without them. All were moved by these arguments, delivered with such signs of contrition and sincerity : and the Indians were detained some days to rest themselves, and at the same time to prove whether treachery was not concealed under the cloak of piety. But no suspicious signs appearing, the fathers returned to their several districts, where they were received with inexpressible joy : the most guilty were slightly punished, purely to gratify the others ; and four only belonging to San Ignacio banished for a certain term, that in such a critical juncture there might be no sparks left to rekindle the fire of rebellion.

The auxiliaries from Yaqui having now joined the captain, soldiers, and faithful Indians of California, it was ordered, that as this mission was now quiet, a sufficient guard should remain in it; and the others repair to the bay of La Paz, in order to form a camp there, and keep a communication open by sea for stores and provisions; and from thence make excursions towards the south. Accordingly preparations were made for transporting thither this little army, partly by sea, with the provisions, and partly by land, with the beasts. They who went by sea, arriving first, landed with great regularity, posted themselves advantageously, and strictly observed military discipline, which indeed proved very necessary; the Indians, with unusual courage and shouts, attacking them several nights, so that some were wounded on both sides. But the appearance of the more numerous body, which came by land, part of which were horse, so intimidated the rebels, that they did not appear either by night or day. Some Indians also came in a peaceable manner, protesting that they had always been faithful; and as such had suffered from the conspirators. They added, that the insolence of the rebels was augmented by a misfortune which a little before had happened to the Philippine galleon, and was as follows,

Don

Don Geronimo Montero arriving at Manila, in his return from Acapulco, before the galleon which was to sail had put to sea, gave an account of the reception, he had met with at cape San Lucas; upon which orders were given to the galleon to touch at the said cape, observing the signals agreed on with the missionary. The galleon happily arrived at the cape, tho' many of her crew were ill of the scurvy; but not perceiving either the signals expected, nor any people on the shore, the pinnace was hoisted out, and thirteen seamen sent to acquaint the father of the neighbouring mission, with their arrival. When they came near the shore, they were surprized at seeing no person to receive them; but tho' they naturally might have suspected some mischief, they landed without the least care; and leaving a few to take care of the pinnace, went up the country, in quest of the village, which they knew to be at a small distance; but by the way the Indians sallied out from an ambush, and letting fly a shower of arrows, killed every man; then running towards the boat, where the seamen were as little on their guard as the others had been, dispatched them in the same manner. The captain, surprized at this delay of the pinnace, tho' not without some apprehension of mischief, sent his long boat manned and

and armed ; but on coming within sight of the pinnace, they found her surrounded by a swarm of Indians, who were pulling her to pieces for the iron-work. Incensed at this, and much more at the dead bodies, the mariners and soldiers leaped ashore, engaged the Indians, wounded some, killed one or two, and took four prisoners, whom they carried on board the ship, where their grief was now greater than their late joy at discovering the cape. The captain committed the prisoners to the care of the master at arms, in order to their being examined before the viceroy ; and without taking in any refreshments or water, tho' in great want of both, weighed anchor, and sailed for Acapulco ; where, as at Mexico, this deplorable misfortune was allowed to be a sufficient proof of the necessity, even setting aside all motives of humanity, for retrieving and supporting the ruined missions of California.

Accordingly the viceroy took some measures towards supporting that tottering conquest ; sendig orders to the governor of Cinaloa, that he should go over to California with a body of men, punish the ringleaders of this rebellion, and intimidate others from engaging in a future ; but at the same time added, that tho' he was occasionally to act in concert with the captain

captain and soldiers of the garrison, he was by no means to be subordinate to him, much less under the direction of the fathers. The governor accordingly sent advice of his orders to Loretto, that the mission's bilander might be sent to him at Cinaloa, adding that they were to abstain from further hostilities at La Paz. In the mean time, the soldiers and confederate Indians had made some incursions into the country, but with little success, meeting with scarce any people to engage; the Indians flying and hiding themselves in caverns, and among the rocks. But now father Guillen sent directions to the captain to repair to the mission of Dolores, and there continue on the defensive; and, at the same time, dispatched the bilander for transporting the governor of Cinaloa, and his men. On his arrival at Loretto, he was received with suitable distinctions and honours, and likewise with great joy and politeness, by the fathers. But the governor soon signified, that he came with an intent to act against the Californians, according to the prejudices which then prevailed at Mexico; and that he was little disposed to listen to the advice of the fathers, tho' so long acquainted with the country, and the nature of the inhabitants. Accordingly he attempted the reduction, by such measures as he judged most

most proper; but after spending two years in it, with various success, he was obliged to own, to his extreme mortification, that the effects of his measures little answered his expectations. In the mean time died, on the 10th of November 1736, the aged father Julian de Mayorga, who having in 1707 laid the foundation of the mission of St. Joseph de Comondu, and governed it in peace, to the great improvement of his Indians, for above twenty-nine years; it was therefore no wonder that they, together with all the fathers and soldiers, should entertain a most cordial affection for him, on account of his extraordinary abilities and virtues.

Soon after the death of this father, the governor altered his conduct, and began to execute what the fathers had at first advised, namely, to strike a terror into the Indians, by attempting some signal action, after which they would consider his will as a law. They added, that less damage would attend this method, than if at first he made use of gentle methods, or pursued them by parties; and that after being thoroughly intimidated, they would court his clemency, and acknowledge it with a more lasting gratitude. Accordingly he went in quest of the Indians, and had the good fortune to bring them to a general action,

in

in which they were scandalously defeated. Their obstinacy and insolence, however, were grown to such a height, during the two preceding years, that instead of surrendering or making overtures for peace, they continued the hostilities by skirmishes, till the governor found means to force them to a second battle, in which their behaviour was the same as in the former; and soon after they surrendered themselves, and in the most submissive manner implored his pardon: but the governor refused to listen to them, till they offered to discover, and deliver up the chief promoters of the late rebellion, and who had the greatest hand in murdering the fathers and soldiers. Accordingly they were delivered up; but, by an ill-timed clemency, he only banished them to the coast of New Spain. Divine justice, however, as if it disapproved of this clemency, did not suffer the bloody rebellion to go unpunished: for a few soldiers only being appointed to guard the banished Indians; the latter attempted to make themselves masters of the bark; so that the soldiers were under a necessity of firing on them, by which means the greatest part of them were killed. Among the few that escaped, were the two hardened wretches who first laid hands on the venerable fathers; “but, adds father Taraval, they both came to a very miserable

nable end ; one being killed in the first year of his banishment ; and the other having climbed a palm-tree, fell from the top of it among the rocks, by which means his body was horribly mangled, and he expired in all the malice of his apostacy."

In the mean time, our gracious sovereign Philip V. on the representation and petition of father Pedro Ignacio Altamifano and Bernardo Lozano, agents for the province of New Spain, ordered another warrant to the viceroy, with positive orders for erecting a new garrison in the southern part of California, agreeably to the instructions sent some years before to the marquis de Casa Fuerte, that under its protection, the lost missions might be re-established, and christianity be for the future supported ; authorizing him, at the same time, to take all such measures as might contribute to the advancement of the conquest. By virtue of this warrant, the governor of Cinaloa was ordered to erect the new garrison in the bay of La Paz ; but afterwards, on considering the importance of a proper harbour for the Philippine ships to put in at, cape San Lucas was judged a more convenient situation. It was likewise ordered, that neither the captain, nor the soldiers of this garrison, should be appointed by the

the fathers, nor, in any manner, depend on them; nor be subordinate to the captain of the garrison of Loretto, but subject only to the orders of the viceroy. The person whom the governor nominated for captain, was don Bernardo Rodrigues Lorenzo, son to the veteran captain of the garrison of Loretto, don Estevan Rodrigues Lorenzo, who being born and brought up in California, under the eye of his worthy father, was possessed of that piety, prudence, courage, and knowledge of the country, which, at that time, were particularly requisite in a captain of such a garrison. Under him were thirty soldiers, ten of whom at first he posted at the new camp of St. Joseph del Cabo; ten at the mission of La Paz, and ten at that of St. Jago de los Coras: but capt. don Bernardo Rodrigues being thought to shew too much deference to the fathers, was soon displaced; and don Pedro Alvarez de Acevedo appointed to succeed him. The father, agent of California, at Mexico, protested against this independency, as contrary to the royal schedules, in which it was expressed, that no alteration should be made in the government of California. This, however, procured no change in the orders of the viceroy, who had been the author of the late regulation. His excellency, however, made an augmentation of five soldiers

diers to the ancient garrison of Loretto; and thus its number became equal to the new garrison of cape San Lucas; but withal directed, that the captain and soldiers should be entirely independent of the fathers; and that, tho' in case of necessity, they were to escort them, yet the superior, or visitor of California, should not have any authority over them, nor should the entrance, discharge, or payment of officers, artificers, soldiers, or seamen, be under their management. Accordingly, the regulation took place, and the fathers, during eighteen months, were eased of that care. But the greatest disorders resulted from this independency, as forsaking the father in their missions, visits, progresses, and expeditions, the neglect of all military duties, oppression of the natives, trading and fishing for pearls, violences committed on the divers, who came to those coasts from New Spain. In fine, such confusions and irregularities were committed in California, that the whole country was on the point of being utterly lost, by the fault of those very garrisons which had been erected for its security: and it was owing to a very singular providence, that the whole inhabitants of California did not again rise on the fathers. These proceedings produced such numbers of complaints, that the viceroy saw himself obliged

lige
the
cap
been
and
com
to th
with
direc
missi
forme

The
Ex
Ph
Hi
tifi

No
govern
Uchiti
and th
than th
gatheri
their c
had be
faithful

VOL

liged to alter his opinion; and, agreeably to the plan of his predecessors, discharged the captain of the garrison of San Lucas, who had been appointed by the governor of Cinaloa; and ordered that the said garrison should be commanded only by a lieutenant, subordinate to the captain of Loretto; that both, together with their soldiers, should, as before, be at the direction of the father visitor; and their admissions, discharges, and payments put on the former footing.

S E C T. XXI.

The southern mission happily restored.

Excellent measures taken by his majesty Philip V. for promoting the conquest. His present majesty Ferdinand VI. ratifies them in their full extent.

No sooner, by the zeal and courage of the governor of Cinaloa, were the Pericues or Uchities, the Guaycuros and Coras reduced, and the new garrison of San Lucas established, than the society appointed new missionaries for gathering together the dispersed members of their churches; especially in those parts which had been stained with the blood of the two faithful missionaries; founding and regulating

the four missions of el Pilar in La Paz bay, Santa Rosa in Palmas bay, St. Joseph near cape San Lucas, and St. Jago among the Coras. Father Antonio Tempis was sent to the latter, and by his unwearied labours, gathered the dispersed Indians together, and officiated with exemplary sedulity till his death. He was a person of solid, uniform, and sublime virtue, and a faithful labourer in the vineyard to his master.

The viceroy, by letters of the 23d of April 1735, and of the 10th of April 1737, acquainted his majesty Philip V. of the insurrection of the Indians, with the subsequent occurrences; and the society was under a necessity of troubling his majesty on the same subject, imploring him to save that mission which had been so much recommended and favoured by his princely care. And these letters had the most happy effect.

The restoration of the ruined missions required an expence to which the product of their lands, or the funds for their support, were far from being sufficient. They had also been exhausted by the extraordinary charges incurred by the insurrections. But notwithstanding these difficulties, the distressed affairs of California were brought to a happy conclusion. The melancholy accounts above mentioned
having

havi
gave
be
was
occa
good
the
the
Calif
execu
celler
catter
cil, s
of the
all the
liform
tration
conqu
tarded
carryi
here,
most
ecution
vember
to the
ters to
inform
and a
Christo

having reached the ears of Philip V. he gave orders that not only a new garrison should be erected, but on the 2d of April 1742, was pleased to sign a warrant that the expences occasioned by the rebellion, should be made good out of the royal treasury : and lastly, that the council of the Indies should lay before him the most effectual means for totally reducing California. The scheme and measures for its execution were zealously espoused by that excellent nobleman don Joseph Carvajal de Lancaster, at that time president of the said council, secretary of state, and knight of the order of the golden fleece, who immediately caused all the preceding transactions, relating to California to be examined ; and his great penetration soon discovered the importance of the conquest, the various difficulties which retarded it, and the most proper measures for carrying it on with success. Nor did he stop here, but procured the royal signature to the most express orders for carrying them into execution. Accordingly, on the 13th of November 1744, a full warrant was dispatched to the count de Fuen Clara, viceroy, with letters to several private persons, requiring fresh informations on various and important heads ; and a very full account was returned by father Christoval de Escobar Llamas, provincial of

M 2

Mexico,

Mexico, dated the 30th of November 1745; and arrived in Madrid after the accession of his present majesty Ferdinand VI. on the ninth of June 1746, who, inheriting all the zeal and magnanimity of his glorious father, on the report of his council strongly recommended by the marquis de la Ensenada, at that time secretary of state and of the Indies, ordered another schedule, much fuller than the former, and directed it to the present viceroy of New Spain. I cannot forbear inserting a literal copy of this instrument, as it is an illustrious monument of the august intentions and ardent zeal of both monarchs; of the foresight, sagacity, and wisdom of his council; of the knowledge, prudence, piety, activity, and grand designs of his ministers.

The KING.

“ Don Juan Francisco de Guemes and Horcasita, lieutenant general of my armies, viceroy, governor and captain general of the provinces of New Spain, and president of my royal audience there, residing in the city of Mexico: on the 13th of November 1734, was dispatched to your predecessor in these employments the count de Fuen-Clara, an order to the following purpose:

the

Co
illust
my b
tain g
of Ne
dience
The
those
23d o
same
has pa
the na
the pr
sures t
ducing
in whic
nor of
ing acc
cil of t
ther wit
of the
said pro
request
Jesus, a
the Indi
its order

The K I N G.

Count de Fuen Clara, cousin, knight of the illustrious order of the golden fleece, lord of my bed-chamber, viceroy, governor, and captain general of the provinces of my kingdom of New Spain, and president of my royal audience there, residing in my city of Mexico: The archbishop viceroy your predecessor in those employments having, by a letter of the 23d of April 1735, and of the 10th of the same month 1737, sent an account of what has passed in the insurrection of the Indians of the nations called Pericu and Guaycura in the province of California, and of the measures taken and the expences incurred by reducing them to the subjection and tranquillity in which by the good conduct of the governor of Cinaloa they then were, and the preceding accounts have been laid before my council of the Indies for their deliberation, together with the origin, progress, and present state of the spiritual and temporal conquest of the said province of California; and I having at the request of father Altamirano of the society of Jesus, and agent general for its provinces in the Indies, and particularly of the missions of its order in California, approved of the mea-

fures taken, and the expences employed in the reduction of them, as I signified to you in letters of the 2d of April in the foregoing year ; it is judged proper, till the receipt of the accounts and reports relative to those letters and which are daily expected from California, to deliberate on in my before mentioned council of the measures which may be most effectual for the entire accomplishment of the reduction and conquest in question ; which has been attempted ever since the year 1523, first by don Fernando Cortez marquis del Valle and first viceroy of these provinces ; and since by some of his successors, and by particular persons at several times : and though large supports were furnished by my royal treasury, yet by misfortunes and insuperable difficulties never took effect, notwithstanding the proposed conquest had the incentive of rich pearl fisheries. Besides the manifest inclination and docility of the natives, for embracing our holy religion, and conforming themselves to a civil life, as among other jesuit missionaries is affirmed by the father Juan Maria de Salva-Tierra and Eusebio Francisco Kino in the year 1698 ; but more particularly and clearly by father Francisco Piccolo in the year 1716, when, by the indefatigable zeal of the religious of the society of Jesus, the only persons who have dedicated them-

themselves to that commendable service, and likewise by the contributions of the faithful, those missions and conversions were already very far advanced; to which desirable work likewise my royal treasury added an annual subsidy of thirteen thousand dollars, from the year 1703, intended principally to defray the charges of a body of soldiers for the missions, and pay the officers and men belonging to the bark which carries the missionaries from the coast of Cinaloa thither: and my said council of the Indies having, with the greatest diligence and punctuality, revised and examined all the several articles on this head, as likewise the reports from the auditor's office, and from the before mentioned father Pedro Ignacio Altamirano and other judicious persons of his order, and versed in those conversions; and my solicitor's opinion on the whole, has been represented to me in council on the 12th of May of this year, that it is of the highest importance that the most effectual measures should be immediately taken for bringing back the said province of the Californias into the bosom of the church, and under my dominion: which advantageous enterprise, though vigorously supported by the catholick zeal of my glorious predecessors, and the viceroy of those provinces, has so often miscarried,

that not a foot of land in that vast territory has been secured: and for its more perfect and speedy accomplishment, my council in their representation of the same day signified to me, that the solid and fundamental base of it must be the conversion of the natives to our holy religion, by means of those particular jesuit missionaries who have made such progresses among them, and all the infidel nations they have taken under their charge throughout all America; and consequently that near all large and safe harbours which may be discovered in the reduced parts, a settlement be made of Spaniards with a fort and garrison, and that likewise in the most convenient part towards the center of their province there may also be a Spanish town as a check to the Indians and refuge to the missionaries in case of an insurrection. And as the transporting of families from hence to those Spanish colonies, would be attended with great trouble and expence, besides the want of them for other settlements, it is thought proper that these emigrations should be made from the city of Mexico and the neighbouring provinces; concerning which we expect the reports and informations required, that we then resolve for the best. The council have farther proposed to me, that in order to the more expeditious reduction of the Indians of the Californias,

lifornias
jesuit
the
sent
where
conti
certa
nias
but
north
this
it we
into
all the
ral de
the to
very
plishm
of gre
the de
the te
solutel
parts
ed: as
one of
territor
those p
necessa
a propo

ifornias, it would be very proper that the
 jesuit missionaries should enter the province on
 the side opposite to that by which those at pre-
 sent there entered, that is by the north part
 where this province joins and borders on the
 continent; it having been discovered and as-
 certained, that the province of the Califor-
 nias is no island as was commonly believed,
 but a terra firma bordering in its upper or
 northern part on that of New Mexico; for by
 this measure its natives will be surrounded, or as
 it were insulated without any passage, or inlet
 into the territories of other savage Indians; and
 all the missionaries proceeding along their feve-
 ral departments to the center of the province,
 the total reduction of it cannot fail of being
 very much shortened. But as to the accom-
 plishment of this project, it is thought to be
 of great consequence, that in the missions of all
 the departments of Indians already reduced,
 the teachers should be doubled; but it is ab-
 solutely necessary to make a progress in the
 parts contiguous to the Indians not yet reduc-
 ed: as besides the advantages common to all,
 one of the missionaries may pass through the
 territories of the infidels for converting them, and
 those parts already peopled, not be without the
 necessary instructions; and never left without
 a proper person to watch every motion that has
 the

the least tendency to treachery or revolt, of which there would be the greatest danger, if these people were left to themselves.

It is also proper, that in all the frontier parts already reduced, a guard of soldiers be stationed for the security both of the missionaries and Indians, and likewise for accompanying the missionaries into the territories of the infidels, being always under the direction of the religious, nor doing any thing unless directed by them: lest by an indiscrete chastisement or excursion they should alarm the Indians. And by these methods it is hoped a great progress will be made in those parts where the missions are established. It is likewise thought proper that for advancing the reduction of this province by missions, they should be extended to the southward from the opposite part in order to meet those which are carrying on to the northward; and that the measures above mentioned may be easily practised in the missions belonging to the same order among the highland Pimas in the province of Sonora, by doubling the missionaries in every converted district bordering on the infidel Indians; and allowing to those religious a guard as above. Thus the missionaries among the highland Pimas proceeding to reduce the nations of the Cocomaricopas and of the Yumas, which reach to the north river,

river, called also Colorado, near the place where it issues into the Californian gulf, the jesuits, according to the former accounts, expecting to be well received by these nations; and founding a village of reduced Indians on the bank of the same river Colorado, they may easily pass over to the other shore of California; and by their success there with the Hoabonomas, or the Bajiopas, a docile and tractable people, they may there found another village for securing the passage on both sides the river, and a communication with the whole terra firma: and proceeding from hence to the southward through the country of California to the ancient missions. With respect to the guard desired in the missions of the highland Pimas, either the detachment stationed at Terrenate, or the other on duty at Pitiqui will be sufficient, as it appears by the report of don Augustin de Vildosola, governor of the province of Cinaloa, that both of them are not necessary: but for the greater security the detachment at Pitiqui may remove to Terrenate, and that of the latter to the missions of the highland Pimas: and thus the proper guard both in the new and former missions of California, may be furnished without any additional expence to my royal revenue. It was also by the same council represented to me, that though the expence of missionary

missionaries should be increased, it must be remembered that by a schedule of the year 1702, an order passed for assisting the missionaries of California, with every thing conducive to their relief, and the accomplishment of the work in which they were engaged; and by another of 1723, that the religious then officiating, or who should for the future officiate in California, should be allowed the same salary as those of their order, and to be paid regularly and punctually, which hitherto has not been done; no expence having been incurred in these missions; nor have they received any allowance or salary. Fifteen missions, the present number in California, having maintained themselves without the least charge to me; purely by the liberal contributions of private persons obtained through the zeal and interest of the religious of the order; and as the means proposed will be attended with so little expence in comparison of the prodigious advantage, it will be proper that all these orders be put in execution; or any others that may be approved by the jesuits, who are best acquainted with the province, and from whom I expect farther accounts: and that from this present time they may speedily be assisted with all necessary sums for the work out of the royal revenue, that the number of jesuit missionaries may be augmented, it being

nece
stria
I
the
missi
their
bule
siona
in h
caut
sever
these
regu
the I
awe
any t
treati
mistr
of ci

necessary that two reside in every reduced district bordering on the infidel Indians.

Lastly, for this corroborating subordination, the pay of the soldiers is to be remitted to the missionaries, that they may receive it from their hands : and that if any soldier be of a turbulent disposition and behaves amiss, the missionaries may send him away and desire another in his room, as without these and other precautions which some able missionaries have on several occasions transmitted to me concerning these provinces, the guards have by their irregularities greatly impeded the reduction of the Indians, whom it is necessary to keep in awe and respect, that they may not attempt any treacherous practices, and at the same time treating them with kindness, to remove their mistrust, and reconcile them to the instructions of civil polity.

S E C T. XXII.

Preparations at Mexico in pursuance of the foregoing royal orders. Endeavours for penetrating into the province of Maqui. Father Sedelmayer repairs to the rivers Gila and Colorado. The coast of CALIFORNIA as far as these rivers surveyed. Father Courfay's expedition against the Apates. Last accounts of the missions of CALIFORNIA, Sonora and Pimeria, till the year 1752.

The foregoing royal orders gave great satisfaction to many of the inhabitants of Mexico, as they were an authentick testimony of the piety, prudence, and magnanimity of the monarch, and his attention to the publick welfare.

We have already observed that father Eusebio Francisco Kino surveyed the whole northern country betwixt the province of Sonora and the rivers Gila and Colorado, and the western port of the gulf of California, and found the coast entirely peopled by Indians, chiefly infidels; that he entered into terms of friendship with the several nations of those vast countries

except

exce
villa
sand
fition
solic
plent
the g
Phil
pence
in Pi
been a
the i
ico f
four a
father
that fa
toward
came
thafar
of par
recour
in the
Kino.
visitati
relative
August
cio and
twenty
his rea

except the Apaches; that he reduced them into villages; built churches; baptized many thousand Indians; brought many more to a disposition for receiving the faith; and passionately solicited a supply of ministers for reaping that plentiful harvest which was ripe for the sickle of the gospel: that the magnanimous prince don Philip V. ordered the usual succours and expences for eight missionaries to be employed in Pimeria and in those parts of it which had been already reduced by father Kino: but from the impediments too usually found at Mexico for disbursements of that nature, only four assignments took place. By the death of father Kino in 1710, the great progress which that father, by his indefatigable zeal, had made towards a compleat reduction of these nations, came to nothing. Father Juan Antonio Balthasar, whose papers we have before made use of part. III. sect. V. and must now again have recourse to, complained of the want of accounts in the year subsequent to the decease of father Kino. All that the father could gather in his visitation of the missions of Sonora and Pimeria relative to our present purpose is, that father Augustin de Campos, missionary of San Ignacio and companion to father Kino survived him twenty five years; during which he imitated his real labours and benevolence in the care
of



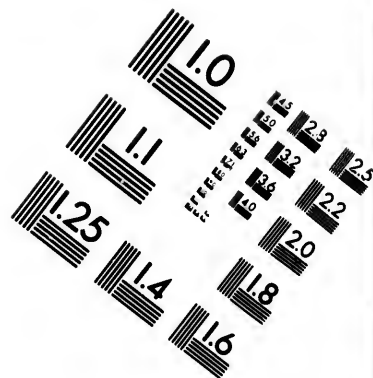
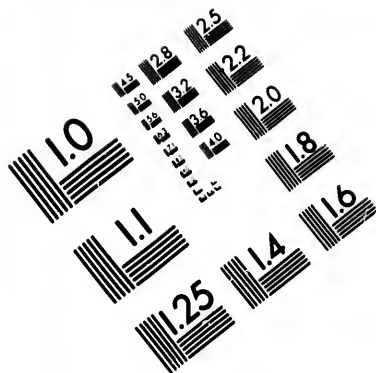
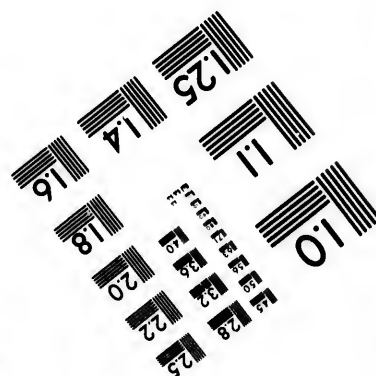
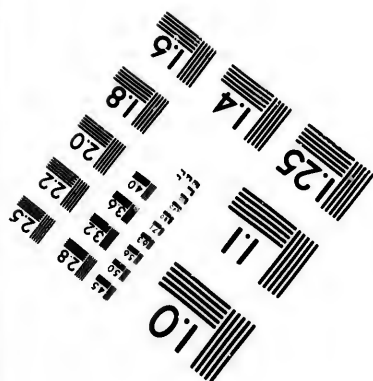
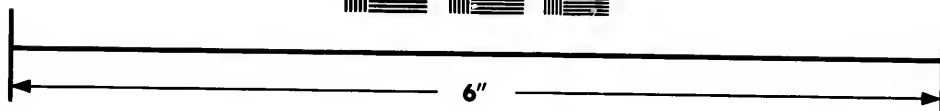
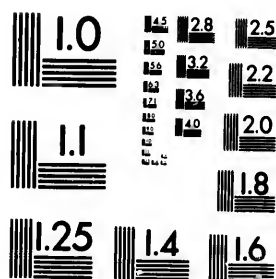


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503



of his mission. In the year 1720, new missionaries came to Conception de Caborca and Tuhutama; and afterwards going to the rancherías of San Edvardo de Baipia, San Louis de Bacapa and San Marcelo lying far north, they found a great defection among the Indians; the little churches built by father Kino in ruins, and the cultivation of the fertile plains in which they had been instructed by that admirable person utterly neglected. These nations now, though for what reason is unknown, go by the name of Papagos. In Guebavi and San Xavier del Bac the depravation was still greater, having been above twenty years without missionaries. The bishop of Durango, don Benito Crespo, with extreme fatigue personally visited his immense diocese; and perceiving the great want of labourers in Pimeria, and the importance of forwarding its reduction, he requested of his majesty to assign three more missionaries for it, and accordingly the proper orders were issued. Conformable to which, in the year 1731, three jesuits retired thither with a very large quantity of presents sent by the prelate to be distributed among the Indians. Thus in high Pimeria, were formed seven missions which are as follows:

1. Dolores with two villages of visitation.
2. San Ignacio also with two villages.
3. Tibu-

3
4
5
6
fiden
7-
ber
T
his r
of M
sum
missio
they
the p
dered
Suc
missio
ed; v
his m
quirin
society
and t
of the
howev
orders
sibility
pecial
The p
part o
Vo

3. Tibutama with nine villages.
4. Caborea with four villages.
5. Suamca with several rancherias.
6. Guebavi with Spanish farms and a considerable number of Indians.
7. San Xavier del Bac has also a great number of Indians.

The marquis' de Villa Puente, who died at his return from Rome, in the imperial college of Madrid in February 1739, left by will a sum of money for the foundation of two other missions in Pimeria; yet even in the year 1749, they had not been erected for want of jesuits in the province of Mexico, and the war had hindered a supply being sent from Old Spain.

Such was the state of Pimeria under seven missions actually existing, and two other endowed; when, in the year 1742, a schedule from his majesty Philip V. arrived at Mexico, requiring the viceroy to recommend to the society the reduction of the province of Moqui, and to furnish it with every thing necessary out of the treasury. The superiors of the society, however desirous of paying obedience to the orders of his majesty, were now under an impossibility of complying for want of labourers, especially in an enterprise so remote and arduous. The province of Moqui joins to the north west part of the kingdom of New Mexico; its inha-

bitants had been wholly converted and reduced by the zeal of the Franciscans; but in 1680, they apostatized; and after massacring the persons who instructed them, revolted, together with the other Indians of New Mexico. The fathers however, after inexpressible labours, restored tranquillity and religion in that kingdom: but all their diligence could not overcome the obduracy of the Moquinos, who for many years opposed all offers of their coming among them. But from the flattering hopes of entirely reducing them, and the great importance of securing New Mexico from invasions on that side, a schedule was sent in the year 1723, to the viceroy, the marquis de Casa Fuerté enjoining him to endeavour the reduction of Moqui. The viceroy concerted with the bishop of Durango, who was of opinion that this difficult enterprize should be put into the hands of the society.

The bishop had not hitherto performed his visitation, and therefore was not well acquainted with the country. The Franciscans could enter Moqui from New Mexico on its western side, without any other impediment than the ignorance and brutality of the Indians. But the only places from whence the jesuits could enter it were Sonora, and upper Pimeria. Moqui indeed lies to the northward of the missions of Tibutama, Guebavi, and others of Pimeria:

but

but
rive
all
a fri
grea
to th
enem
necte
inhab
Conse
jesuits
fore t
throug
Pimas
the riv
copas,
tually
selling
and th
remem
mission
and mo
dels, th
five ye
them v
vince i
only tw
Mexico
such suc

but the distance between Tbutama and the river Gila is not less than eighty leagues, and all inhabited by Indians, with whom indeed a friendship has been concluded, but the far greatest part of them are declared infidels. Next to these are the savage Apaches, implacable enemies to the Spaniards, and all Indians connected with them. Beyond these the Moqui inhabit an extensive, but mountainous country. Consequently there was no direct way for the jesuits to penetrate into this province; and therefore the attempt could only be made either through the country of the Sobaypuris, or Pimas now called Papagos, extending along the river Gila to the country of the Cocomaricopas, who were professed infidels, and perpetually at war with the Nijoras, Cocomaricopas selling their Nijoran prisoners to the Pimas; and these to the Spaniards. It must also be remembered, that besides the great number of missions already under the care of the jesuits, and most of them on the frontiers of the infidels, the Marquis de Valero the viceroy had five years before, namely in 1718, charged them with the reduction of Nayarith, a province inclosed within the Sierra Madre, and only two hundred leagues from the capital of Mexico. And their labours were attended with such success, that the chief of that nation came

to do homage to the viceroy ; adorned with the mantle, thali, bracelets, collar, crown of feathers, and other ornaments used by the ancient Chichimeca kings. Such an important reduction was not therefore to be deferred, lest they might alter their minds and rebel. It is true the Franciscans were also employed in the missions of Junta de los Rios, two hundred and fifty leagues north east of New Mexico, lately founded and vigorously carried on by the zeal of the duke de Linares, viceroy of Mexico. These were of equal importance as lying near the French possessions of Mississippi and Louisiana. From these and other obstacles, all designs on Moqui were suspended. But the new order in 1742, strictly recommending the reduction of that country to the society, father Ignacio Keler missionary of Santa Maria Suamca was ordered to make the first attempt. This father in the preceding years, had been several times as far as the river Gila, both to visit his neophytes and to keep up a friendship with the Indians who were enemies to the Apaches. But in September 1743, he set out from his mission with a very small guard, a Spanish justice, whose displeasure he had incurred by protecting his Indians, not allowing him to take any more : and to this the miscarriage of the enterprise was entirely owing.

The

T
tin
no
a
un
to
the
plu
fon
tur
arre
ing
gin
a ne
foll
Jaco
bein
proc
take
in c
settle
of t
then
to ta
up a
map
self in
Ac
from

The father came to the river Gila, and continued his journey some days further to the northward, till he came among rancherias of a different language, and the people quite unknown. The Indians had not the courage to insult the strangers in the day-time, but in the night they attacked them for the sake of plunder; and it was with great difficulty that some horses were saved to facilitate their return; one of the soldiers also was killed by an arrow. The father however was for continuing his march; but his Indian attendants beginning to leave him, he found himself under a necessity of returning to his mission. The following year 1744, orders were sent to father Jacob Sedelmayer missionary of Tubutama that being less exposed to the barbarians, he should proceed on this discovery: he was directed to take guides, send messages to the Moqui, and, in case he found any Franciscan missionaries settled there, he should exhort the inhabitants of the country to love and obey them; and then withdraw: if he met with none, he was to take a careful survey of these parts, draw up an account of his journey, and delineate a map of the country; but not to involve himself in any known danger.

Accordingly, in October, the father set out from his mission, and after travelling eighty

leagues, reached the river Gila, where he found six thousand Papagos, and near the same number of Pimas and Cocomaricopas dwelling in different rancherias. Here he was well received, having before contracted a friendship with them. Among these, as before, he met with several axes and knives, distributed among them by father Kino: he informed them of his design of going to Moqui, and at first they voluntarily offered to direct him in the way and accompany him; but soon after began to shew their dislike of the enterprize, and at last absolutely refused to embark in it. The true cause of this change in their behaviour, was partly owing to the Tibutamas in his company, who being a people void of courage had very unwillingly attended him in so long a journey; and partly to the Cocomaricopas, who grudged the little presents they carried to be distributed among the Nijoras and Moquis. But there was also another reason for their change of behaviour, namely, a fear lest the Spaniards should enter into friendship with these two nations; when, in case of a war, they would be utterly defenceless, being situated between them, and the Cocomaricopas were always at variance with the Nijoras; the Moquis likewise shewed themselves sometimes on their frontiers in an hostile method, though at other times they visited them

them
may
dent
ackno
witho
state:
or ill
of the
every
on all
he wor
was co
incom
But
fruitless
marico
they in
into th
turned
the cou
of the
rance a
preter v
underst
origina
ney, an
it, have
would h
sing the

them in a peaceable manner. This precaution may perhaps appear too rational and provident for such savage nations. But we must acknowledge that there is no community without its political mysteries and reasons of state: and that in all parts mankind are well or ill governed, in proportion to the culture of the mind. However this be, the father tried every method to pursue his march, but found on all sides unsurmountable difficulties, unless he would have opened a way by force, which was contrary to the orders he had received, and incompatible with his profession.

But that the expedition might not be entirely fruitless, he with the free consent of the Cocomaricopas, took a view of the whole territory they inhabited on each side of the Gila, went into the inward parts of their country, and returned from thence to the river Colorado, and the country of the Yumas, who were enemies of the Cocomaricopas, though in all appearance a branch of their nation: for the interpreter who accompanied the fathers, sufficiently understood the language of the Yumas. The original narrative of father Sedelmayer's journey, and the map which was to be annexed to it, have never come to my hands; both I own would have been of great use to me in composing the map at the front of this little work;

but the substance of it is to be found in the *New-Theatro Americano*, and in the abovementioned papers of father Balthasar, which agree in substance as being written by those who had before them the same memoirs, and of which they have made a very faithful use. What is certain from both is, that the banks near the source of the Gila are inhabited by the Apaches; at some distance below which that river is joined by the Azul, which is thought to issue from the mountains, and waters the pleasant and fruitful country of the Nijoras, till its influx into the Gila. Afterwards on both sides of this river, there is an uninhabited tract of about twenty leagues, at the end of which are three large rancherias of Pimas, the greatest of which called Judac, occupies fourteen leagues of a pleasant fertile country, well watered by means of trenches which, the country being level, are easily carried from the Gila. Twelve leagues farther towards the north east, is the new discovered river of de la Assumption, composed of two rivers, namely, el Salado and el Verde; which in their way to the Gila run through a very pleasant level country of arable land, inhabited by the Cocomaricopas who are separated from the Pimas by a desert, though united to them in consanguinity. Their kingdom is bounded on the west, by a desert and mountainous country,

try,
who
its
the
thou
flux
A
who
ju &
and
he
acco
ward
The
little
inve
side
cheria
and
and
fertile
beans
veget
Here
their
found
positio
thoug
nism

try, extending to the rancherias of the Yumas, who live along the river Colorado, but below its junction with the Gila. Over this desert, the Cocomaricopas pass to the river Colorado, though there is a much shorter way by the conflux of the two rivers.

Across this desert they led father Sedelmayer, who it seems did not visit the abovementioned junction of the rivers, which father Kino saw, and gave it the name of San Dionysio; nor did he know any thing of the Achedomas, who according to Kino inhabit its eastern shore northward from its junction with the Colorado. The Yumas though their idiom differs very little from that of the Gila Cocomaricopas, are inveterate enemies to them: but on the western side of the Colorado, there are likewise rancherias of Cocomaricopas allied to those of Gila; and living in a valley thirty six leagues in length, and for the space of nine leagues remarkably fertile and pleasant, cultivated for kidney-beans, calabashes, melons, and other esculent vegetables; and by their industry well watered. Here they saw some Indians cross the river with their families and provisions in batteaus, and found in them all that courteous and liberal disposition for which father Kino commends them, though at first the Yumas shewed some astonishment at the visit, being the only one since the time

time of that friendly missionary. From these accounts, it was apprehended, that by means of seven or eight missions along the Gila, two among the Colorado Cocomaricopas, an additional one among the Sobaypuris, and another in San Ambrosio del Busanic, together with those already founded in high Pimeria, the entire reduction of the nations of the Pimicas and Papabotas or Papagos might be accomplished.

It was also the unanimous opinion of the fathers, that this reduction should be vigorously attempted, as opening a passage to the Moqui, and being an effectual barrier against the continual hostilities of the Apaches: and in order to this they thought it would be proper, that father Sedelmayer, who had lately taken that fatiguing survey should repair to Mexico. Accordingly, that indefatigable father again cheerfully set out on a journey of five hundred leagues to the capital, where he had the pleasure of finding the provincial engaged in drawing up the report which had been required by his majesty, concerning the missions of Pimeria and California. He had besides the pleasure of seeing that the sentiments and schemes of the provincial, absolutely agreed with his own, even before he had been heard, but much more when he came to shew the solidity of his pro-

posals,

posals,
The pr
been co
fornia,
relating
possible
to the n
As the
many p
taken su
following

The p
settleme
along th
the fath
thing, d
son of t
the quali
a necessi
the nativ
their lan
the missi
by the fo
That tho
the soil is
cult to p
side, bot
the want

posals, by a narrative of his recent discoveries. The provincial, from the accounts which had been communicated to him concerning California, and these new lights he now received, relating to Pimeria, drew up his report with all possible perspicuity, and with the candour due to the munificent intention of such a monarch. As the report, or memorial, expatiates on many particulars, of which we have already taken sufficient notice, we shall only add the following abstract of it.

The provincial begins with observing, that no settlement of Spaniards can be made in California along the coast, nor up the country; nor have the fathers been able to accomplish any such thing, during the space of fifty years, by reason of the extreme barrenness of the country, the qualities of which he describes, there being a necessity of maintaining the greatest part of the natives, whereby not only the products of their lands, but likewise the contributions of the missions, on the other side, and that sent by the four rivers of Cinaloa are consumed. That tho' in Monte Rey, and Cabo Mondocino, the soil is more fertile, it would be very difficult to prosecute the reduction on the north side, both on account of its barrenness, and the want of labourers. And for these reasons,
the

the fifteenth mission from that of San Ignacio, which till then had bordered on the infidels, had no fixed station. Besides, the missions could not be at a great distance from the gar- rison, and extend themselves along the western coast of the sea, as they could not there receive any succours without previously reducing the nations on the eastern coast of the gulf: and in order to this, it was necessary first to secure the conveyance of provisions from the opposite coast of Caborca, on the continent of New Spain, which had as yet been but superficially surveyed, and the creeks and harbours never founded. The coast also is steep, and the greatest part of it without water; besides, being inhabited by Seris and Tepocas, but very imperfectly reduced; and the town of Caborca lying 22 leagues up the country, a second new bark was necessary; the first being employed in bringing from Matanchel and Yaqui to Loretto and La Paz, the appointments and necessaries for the mission, and the products of Cinaloa; and there was no possibility that she could likewise serve as a transport in the more inward and tempestuous part of the gulf. Thirdly, it was necessary to augment the gar- rison of Loretto, thirty soldiers not being suf- ficient for guards and settlements so remote, as the first new mission was to be near 50 leagues

leagues
was pos
be grea
previou
conquer
of easy
the Gila
lower C
naloa,
without
tate tha
ceed, b
be a che
ward th
all that v
was tha
twenty-t
the Indi
and redu
and that
ly increa
sions, an
tiers: th
licence t
who wer
ployed i
cause th
jesuits fo
united to

leagues N. of San Ignacio ; that every thing was possible to the king, but the charge would be great. For these reasons, without forgetting previously to assist California, he proposed the conquest of the highland Pimeria, as a country of easy access, level, well peopled, and, about the Gila and Colorado, very fertile. For as lower California could not subsist without Cinaloa, so upper California could not subsist without Pimeria. This conquest would facilitate that of Moqui, in case it should not succeed, by the way of New Mexico ; and would be a check upon the Apaches, or at least forward the reduction of them. In order to this, all that was required, with regard to the society, was that the dismission which it had made of twenty-two missions, in the diocese of Durango, the Indians of them being perfectly converted, and reduced into villages, might be allowed ; and that the number of jesuits should be greatly increased, both to act in the remaining missions, and to double the missionaries in the frontiers : that the father general should grant his licence to great numbers of persons in Europe, who were passionately desirous of being employed in such worthy functions ; that he should cause the gulf to be again surveyed by the jesuits for ascertaining whether California was united to the continent of New Spain ; this being

being doubted of at Mexico, tho' not in Europe.

The father observed, that the allowance of three hundred dollars to missions settled, near 600 leagues distant from Mexico, was too little, especially at the beginning, the carriage of necessaries amounting to half the sum : that the garrison of Pitquin could not at present be spared for an expedition to the river Colorado ; for tho' the Yaqui and Maya nations were now quiet, yet as the measures taken to pacify them were disagreeable, they might possibly on the removal of the garrison break out into a second revolt. This garrison is on the south bounded by the Yaquis ; northward it joins to the Seris and Tepocas, who are either infidels, or imperfectly reduced ; and tho' father Salva Tierra civilized them, and the missionaries have baptized many, they still retain such a love for their liberty and customs, as all the labours of the missionaries have not been able to obliterate ; so that it is impossible to incorporate them with the missions by mildness. On the other hand, the barrenness and want of water, in most parts of the country, will not admit of any mission being settled amongst them : his majesty therefore may order his ministers to draw them by presents to the villages, or a mission to which they may
all

all rep
But w
withou
sible to
rison o
nient.
which
of the
those in
what m
vince v
the gar
For thi
which h
out any
tioned a
of Santa
rous Ind
the Apa
tachment
sent to d
Xavier d
viseable
should b
Gila, wi
and, inste
soldiers ;
on our fro
that, at

all repair, may be founded in some fertile spot. But whether the one or the other can be done without the protection of a garrison, is impossible to be known. The removal of the garrison of Terrenate appeared still more inconvenient. For if notwithstanding this garrison, which had been erected by the viceroy, as duke of the conquest, the insolence of the Apaches, those invaders of Sonora, was at such an height, what might not be apprehended, if the province was left defenceless from Colorado, to the garrison of Coro de Guachi de Fronteras? For this reason it appeared, that the garrison, which hitherto had been ambulatory, and without any fixed post, might be constantly stationed among the Sobaypuris, in the mission of Santa Maria de Suamca: as thus its numerous Indians may be instructed, and led against the Apaches; and, to the same purpose, a detachment of twelve or fifteen soldiers may be sent to do duty as guards in the mission of San Xavier del Bac. Lastly, it seemed most advisable to the provincial, that a new garrison should be erected on the banks of the river Gila, within the territories of the Apaches: and, instead of fifty, to consist of one hundred soldiers; for being in their country, and not on our frontiers, a greater number was required; that, at the same time, some might attend to
military

military duties, and the cultivation of the ground, and others march into the enemy's country, bring them to peaceable terms, or disperse them. Thus all the countries, under the dominion of the king, would be inclosed as in a circle; by the concurrence of the garrisons, the ferocity of the Apaches would be quelled; the reduction of the territories of the Moqui be facilitated, and all the intermediate country being likewise brought to terms, the conquest would be extended to New Mexico; the peaceable nations, along the Gila and Colorado, the Sobaypuris, Pimas, Papagos, Comaricopas, and Yumas would be sheltered; a door would be opened for propagating christianity, on the other side of these two rivers; and, what is not of the least consequence, a passage opened to California by land. The erection of such a garrison at first, would be more expensive than the present measures; but, all things considered, it would be the cheapest; as in a small space of time the greatest part of those chargeable garrisons, now subsisting, would be rendered useless, and, consequently, might be spared. For this garrison alone, would accomplish that which experience has convinced us is impossible to be done by all the others.

These

The
report
the king
his vice
cution
without
less seen
nothing
California
sion on
possible
on the
greatly
by land
besides,
coast of
and the
side of th
contract
tants of
several c
shoals, an
puedes, a
would ha
inhabitant
faith, by
from Cali
mitted to
stead of

VOL. II

These were the principal heads of the father's report; and those which the prudent zeal of the king recommended to the examination of his viceroy, with orders to enter upon the execution of what he should think most proper, without any further warrant. It will doubtless seem strange to some, that in this report, nothing is proposed particularly in favour of California; but the establishment of a new mission on the coast of the gulf, in the nearest part possible to the Colorado, if properly seconded, on the opposite coast of Caborca, would have greatly facilitated the desired communication by land between the missions of both coasts: besides, the commerce of the mission, with the coast of Caborca, in order to obtain supplies, and the communication of one with the other side of the gulf, would have tended greatly to contract an acquaintance between the inhabitants of both shores; at the same time, the several channels, islands, rocks, sand banks, shoals, and the dangerous passages of Salispuedes, and most of the Seris and Tepocas would have been frequented by sea; and the inhabitants civilized, and inclined to renew their faith, by means of this transitory intercourse from California; and, consequently, have submitted to the mild yoke of the gospel, if, instead of being violently forced from their

coast, a regular trade were carried on with them, according to the earnest desire of the father Salva-Tierra, part III. sect. IX. Besides, the missionaries in the north of California, by being assisted by a bark or two more, a greater number of soldiers, and the opportunity of receiving their provisions directly from the other coast, without waiting for the slow supplies from Loretto, which, after a long voyage, are subject to a very chargeable land carriage, might have penetrated thro' the whole country, to the river Colorado, on one side, and to the famous Puerto de Monte Rey, on the other. After which, when the country behind them was intirely reduced, what difficulty would attend the forming at Monte Rey, from the Philippines, or New Spain, a large and splendid colony, or garrison? With how much greater ease might the missionaries, soldiers, or inhabitants of the colony, go from thence to the river Colorado, or the Gila, to the country of the Apaches, the Maqui, or new Mexico? But the provincial contented himself with only proposing the conquest of Pimeria, as the most easy and least expensive; tho' the whole conquest would not have been attended with such valuable consequences as the single colony at Monte Rey, and the garrison of a hundred soldiers on the Gila, in the territory

territory
opinion
chea,
filled
labour
tonio
had se
measur
encies,
mayer
tries, n
have f
majesty
the cou
so man
soon h
every in
structed
why sho
veral ad
countrie
case wit
outraged
and hur
the exam
which c
flection
stracy,
against i

territory of the Apaches. And this was the opinion of the illustrious don Martin Elizacoechea, bishop of Mechoacan, who, while he filled the see of Durango, visited, with infinite labour, the whole diocese. Father Juan Antonio Balthasar, who, as visitor of the missions, had seen the whole country, adds, that by this measure, besides the abovementioned conveniencies, the desires of fathers Kino and Sedelmayer of building a city in those remote countries, might have been fulfilled, which would have firmly cemented these conquests with his majesty's other dominions in those parts: for the country is so fertile, and at the same time has so many rich mines, that a garrison here would soon have increased into a populous town, every inhabitant of which might have been instructed in the duties of a soldier. Besides, why should not the Apaches, at seeing the several advantages of settlements made in their countries, be disposed to peace, as was the case with the Chichimicas, once so brutal and outrageous, especially if treated with mildness and humanity. And to this may be added, the example of a virtuous life in the Spaniards; which doubtless would follow from the reflection of individuals, the institution of magistracy, and his majesty's royal proclamation against immorality of every kind.

Whilst these reports were sending to Madrid, and his majesty's final resolution expected at Mexico, the father provincial Escobar sent circular letters by father Juan Antonio Balthasar, visitor general of the missions, directing every missionary to send a short account of his mission, its beginning, progress, and present condition, in order to lay before his majesty. He also directed, that a fresh survey should be taken by sea of the coasts of the gulf of California; and likewise that the new entrances should be attempted towards the Gila. The missionaries of California accordingly drew up their narratives, and of them we have made use in the compilation of our work. Besides what has been already inserted, I shall add that in the year 1745, the missions, visitation-towns, and missionaries in California were as follows:

I. Nuestra Senora de Loretto, in 25° . 30 min. also the royal garrison, and the place where the barks deliver their lading. The missionary father Gaspar de Truxillo.

II. San Xavier.—Father Miguel del Barco.—Its villages or towns are

1. San Xavier, in 25° . 30 min.
2. Santa Rosalia, 7 leagues W.
3. S. Miguel, 8 leagues N.
4. S. Augustine, 10 leagues S. E.
5. Dolores, 2 leagues E.

6.
II.
form
Fath

I.
30 m

2.

3.

4.

5.

6.

IV.

Hotel.

1. S

2. S

3. S

its nam

V. S

mission

Francis

tober 1

Druet.—

1. Sa

2. A

3. A

4. A

VI. S

Maria N

1. Sa

6. San Pablo, 8 leagues N. W.

III. Nuestra Senora de los Dolores del Sur, formerly San Juan Baptista Malibat, or Ligui.—Father Clemente Guillen.—Villages—

1. Nuestra Senora de los Dolores, 24°. 30 min.

2. La Concepcion de Nuestra Senora.

3. La Incarnacion de el Verbo.

4. La Santissima Trinidad.

5. La Redempcion.

6. La Resurreccion.

IV. San Luis Gonsaga.—Father Lamberto Hotel.—Villages—

1. San Luis Gonsaga, in 25°.

2. San Juan Nepomuceno.

3. Santa Maria Magdalena, in the bay of its name.

V. San Joseph de Commondu—without a missionary, on account of the death of father Francisco Xavier Wagner, on the 12th of October 1744, in the interim, served by father Druet.—Villages—

1. San Joseph, in 26°.

2. Another village, 1 league W.

3. Another, 7 leagues N.

4. Another, 10 leagues E. on the shore.

VI. Santa Rosalia Mulege.—Father Pedro Maria Nascimben.—Villages—

1. Santa Rosalia, in 26°. 50 min.

2. Santissima Trinidad, 6 leagues S. S. E.

3. S. Marcos, 8 leagues N.

VII. La Purissima Concepcion. — Father Jacobo Druet. — Village —

La Purissima Concepcion, in 26°.

It has six other villages, within 8 leagues round Cabecera, or metropolis of the mission, the names of which are not enumerated.

VIII. Nuestra Señora de Guadalupe. — Father Joseph Casteige. — Villages —

1. Nuestra Señora de Guadalupe in 27°.

2. Concepcion de Nuestra Señora, 6 leagues S.

3. San Miguel, 6 leagues S. E.

4. San Pedro and San Pablo, 8 leagues E.

5. Santa Maria, 5 leagues N.

IX. San Ignacio. — Father Sebastian de Sistiaga. — Villages —

1. San Ignacio, in 28°.

2. San Borja, 8 leagues.

3. S. Joachin, 3 leagues.

4. S. Sabas, 3 leagues.

5. San Athanasio, 5 leagues.

6. Santa Monica, 7 leagues.

7. Santa Martha, 11 leagues.

8. Santa Lucia, 10 leagues.

9. Santa Nynfa, 5 leagues.

X. Nuestra Señora de los Dolores del Noite. — Father Fernando Confag.

This

The
Ignac
and C
league
of 29°
eight l

XI.

N, by
cerning
ba, yet
be fou
well di
Ignacio

XII.

Tempis

1. Sa

2. T

de La I

3. T

XIII.

Of this
nor of
the S. w

XIV.

XV.

station c

XVI.

and at th
another

CALIFORNIA. 199

This mission was joined with that of San Ignacio, and cultivated by the fathers Sistiaga and Confag : within its district, which lies 30 leagues from S. Ignacio, and in the latitude of 29° . were already five hundred and forty-eight baptized Indians.

XI. Santa Maria Magdalena, begun in the N, by the same father Confag, who wrote concerning it to the father provincial Joseph Barba, yet no convenient place for its seat was to be found, tho' the converted Indians were as well disposed, and as regular as those of San Ignacio.

XII. San Jago del Sur.—Father Antonio Tempis.—Villages—

1. San Jago, in 33° .

2. The anchoring-place of Santa Maria de La Luz.

3. The anchoring-place of San Borja.

XIII. Nuestra Senora del Pilar de la Paz. Of this mission no account came to Mexico, nor of the others which had been restored in the S. which are,

XIV. Santa Rosa, in Palmas bay.

XV. San Joseph del Cabo de S. Lucas, the station of the new royal garrison.

XVI. San Juan Baptista, begun in the N. and at the same time it was ardently desired that another new mission might be founded in the

N. at the village of San Juan Baptista ; and accordingly several entrances were made, especially by father Consag for preparing the minds of the Indians ; but there was neither a fund for endowing it, soldiers for defence, nor missionaries.

Whilst father Consag was thus employed, he received an order to prepare himself for taking a survey of the coasts of the gulf. This service he had been particularly selected for, being in a very eminent manner possessed of all the talents necessary for such an enterprise. The difficulties were very great ; as he wanted every thing necessary towards the execution of it. But, as that father observes, " the importance and consequence of this necessary service surmounted them all." The missions, considering this work to be equally advantageous to the service of christianity, and his majesty, tho' labouring under great difficulties themselves, contributed to defray the necessary expences of boats, seamen, provisions, and every other requisite suggested, by those who knew the dangers of sailing on seas, and visiting coasts unknown, and inhabited only by savages. They also put on board a certain number of christian Cochini, furnishing them with cloathing and arms. Every thing being thus in readiness, father Consag left Loretto, accompanied

panied b
son of
gues Lor
and arriv
lat. of 2
boats, or
tain did
voyage ;
took the
Within a
that the I
dered the
and pulled
at hearing
ing imme
force, to S
it till the
it was only
wards pro

Father C
an accur
rado, as
journal, at
faction of
undertake
that those
benefit of
the honour
Americano

panied by don Bernardo Rodrigues la Larrea, a son of the worthy capt. don Estevan Rodrigues Lorenzo, often mentioned in this history ; and arriving at the shore of San Carlos in the lat. of 28°. he embarked with his men in four boats, on the 9th of June, 1746. The captain did not accompany the father in this voyage ; but he procured him a canoe, and took the most effectual measures for success. Within a few days, the melancholy news arrived, that the Indian savages of the coast had murdered the father, soldiers, seamen, and Indians, and pulled the boats to pieces. The captain, at hearing this shocking account, was for going immediately in a canoe, with an armed force, to San Carlos ; but the fathers opposed it till the news should be confirmed, suspecting it was only a fiction of the Indians, as it afterwards proved to be.

Father Confag, with his body of men, took an accurate survey as far as the river Colorado, as may be seen in the father's original journal, at the end of this work, for the satisfaction of the reader, and to animate others to undertake the like laborious tasks, by shewing that those who employ their talents for the benefit of society, will not fail of receiving the honours they deserve. In the new *Theatro Americano* may also be seen a curious extract
of

of this journal. All that we shall at present observe, or rather repeat is, that in this voyage, it was evident, beyond all possibility of doubt, that California is a peninsula, joining to the continent of New Spain; and that the extremity of the gulf, is the river Colorado, which divides the former from the latter.

Whilst the society, in obedience to the royal orders, were employed in these difficult attempts, other measures were likewise taken by the viceroy. The resignation of the twenty-two missions, in the diocese of Durango, was admitted, as now they were only a weight on the society, furnishing no opportunity for that labour which exerts itself in extending the doctrines of christianity. The flying garrison of Terenate was fixed at San Phelipe de Jesu Guevavi, according to the *Theatro Americano*, in which an account of it is given under that name; and supposes it to have been erected there before the year 1748, when that work was printed at Mexico. Guevavi is situated among the Sobaypures in a fine well watered plain, abounding in wood and pastures, tho' not remarkable for its plenty of other products; at a small distance from the territories of the Apaches, and within a few leagues of the mission of Suamca, the place where father Escovar proposed it should be established.

This

This
enfig
contri
univers
Sonor
account
and th
and o
comm
who ad
here i
tract
Chigag
Antere
bunde
Moqui
garrifon
garrifon
three h
their fr
and the
try is a
cragging
of water
have be
vage an
vated la
them w
ductions

This garrison consists of a captain, lieutenant, ensign, serjeant, and forty-seven soldiers. What contributed to hasten this undertaking was the universal complaint of the whole province of Sonora, which was under continual alarms, on account of the depredations of the Apaches; and these, since the year 1740, were so frequent and open, that the name of Apache is now commonly given to every infidel or apostate who acts as a declared enemy. The Apaches, here intended are those within the circular tract of ground extending from the river Chigagua, by the garrison of Janos Fronteras, Anterenate, or Guevavi, to the Gila. It is bounded on the north, by the country of the Moqui and New Mexico; on the east, by the garrison of Passo; and on the south, by the garrison of Chigagua. Within this circuit of three hundred leagues the Apaches reside in their small rancherias, erected in the valleys and the breaches of mountains. Their country is also of very difficult access, from the cragginess of the mountains, and the scarcity of water. According to some prisoners who have been ransomed, they are extremely savage and brutal; they have very little cultivated land, nor does their country supply them with any plenty of spontaneous productions. They are cruel to those who have

the

the misfortune to fall into their hands; and among them are several apostates. They go entirely naked, but make their incursions on horses of great swiftness, which they have stolen from other parts, a skin serving them for a saddle. Of the same skins they make little boots or shoes of one piece; and by these they are traced in their flight. They begin the attack with shouts, at a great distance, to strike the enemy with terror. They have not naturally any great share of courage; but the little they can boast of, is extravagantly increased on any good success. In war they rather depend on artifice than valour; and on any defeat submit to the most ignominious terms, but keep their treaties no longer than suits their conveniency. His majesty has ordered, that if they require peace, it should be granted; and even offered to them before they are attacked. But this generosity they construe to proceed from fear. Their arms are the common bows and arrows of the country. The intention of their incursions is plunder, especially horses, which they use both for riding and eating; the flesh of these creatures being one of their greatest dainties.

These people, during eighty years past, have been the dread of Sonora, no part of which was secure from their violences. Our people

people
tages
genera
late y
been c
the suc
cipally
of the
Escalar
Califor
fate att
Coro
Baptist
and co
private
provinc
themsel
fifteen,
sue the
rous an
low no
country
smokes
themsel
especial
Aufa, in
pastures
scription
rich, ha

people have occasionally obtained some advantages over them ; but the actions were not general, and consequently not decisive. Of late years the insolence of these savages has been carried to the most audacious height, from the success of some of their stratagems, principally owing to the variances and indolence of the Spaniards. In one of these, capt. Escalante, who had served in that quality in California, lost his life. The like unhappy fate attended the last captain of the garrison at Coro de Guache de Fronteras, don Juan Baptista de Ausa, tho' famous for his valour and conduct, and with him fell a great many private men. The Apaches penetrate into the province by difficult passes ; and after loading themselves with booty will travel in one night fifteen, eighteen, or twenty leagues. To pursue them over the mountains, is equally dangerous and difficult ; and in the levels they follow no paths. On any entrance into their country, they give notice to one another by smokes or fires : and at this signal they all hide themselves. The damages they have done, especially since the death of the brave capt. Ausa, in the villages, settlements, farms, roads, pastures, woods, and mines, are beyond description ; and many of the latter, tho' very rich, have been forsaken. Out of the twenty-four

four missions of jesuits in Sonora and Pimeria, twenty are exposed to the incursions of the Apaches, which is likewise the fate of the parish of Nacosari, and part of the garrison of San Juan Baptista, the capital of the province, the only two where secular priests officiate. Hence arises the difficulty of communicating the necessary instructions to the Indians; as there is no continuing for any time at the rancherias, nor can they, without great danger, come to the seats of the mission: and this occasions a necessity of bearing with many of their irregularities; and the unhappy consequence is the impossibility of bringing the new christian communities to a life of devotion and polity as in other parts.

In the year 1747, the viceroy having consulted with the marquis de Altamira, secretary at war, determined to give the Apaches such a blow as should not soon be forgotten. Accordingly strict orders were issued that each of the garrisons of New Biscay, Passo, New Mexico, Janos, Fronteras, and Terrenate or Guevavi, should send thirty foldiers; and that this corps should be augmented by the Spanish militia, and as many armed Indians as could be procured; and all at one time enter the country of the Apaches, and seek them in their secret retreats. The jesuits of Sonora not only

encouraged
in the
vision
appoint
not an
arms
were f
of exe
greater
enter
trated
much
being
kept f
our tro
were r
they fe
killing,
every t
the Ind
Moqui
tempt,
Thus
reduce
pences
diverted
posed,
daring
nated f

encouraged the Indians of the missions to join in the expedition, but contributed horses, provisions, and money. However, at the time appointed, the governor of New Mexico did not arrive, being suddenly obliged to turn his arms against some neighbouring Indians, who were fortunately discovered, when on the point of executing a sanguinary design. Those at a greater distance tho' unwilling separately to enter an enemy's country, joined, and penetrated a great way into it, without meeting so much as a single Indian. For the Apaches being informed of the intended expedition, kept so good a watch, that they withdrew as our troops approached; and whilst the loyalists were roving about the country to no purpose, they fell on Sonora, now quite defenceless, killing, plundering, ravaging, and destroying every thing they met with. Nor was this all; the Indians endeavoured to penetrate as far as Moqui; but were obliged to abandon the attempt, for want of provisions.

Thus the expedition, which was intended to reduce the Apaches proved abortive; the expences were lost, the contributions of Sonora diverted to foreign views, itself left more exposed, and less capable of defence, the enemy daring by their success, and our people alienated from such expeditions for the future.

However,

However, in the year 1748, preparatives were made for a new campaign; and to the soldiers and Spanish militia, were added three hundred Apatas, and the like number of Pirnas, whom the fathers had again fitted out to the best of their power. Their rendezvous was at Coro de Guachi de Fronteras, where they were incommoded by the rains which fall in November and December, the time appointed for their march. They visited the mountains of Chigagua, the usual retreat of the savages; but were so far from finding any Apaches, that they could not even discover any vestiges of their having been there, the melting of the snows having obliterated their tracks. In their retreat they met with a rancheria, where they killed a few of the enemy, and made ten prisoners. Such was the whole result of an expedition which had made so much noise in America. Providence, however, thought proper to bring about an event, which human address had attempted in vain. For some of the Apaches, terrified at the extraordinary preparations of the Spaniards, came to the garrison of Janos petitioning for peace, and the liberty of settling near the mission. At the same time another troop came with the same intention to Fronteras, adding a request, that the father would please to instruct them:

and,

and,
their
were
vail o
A
in O
another
again
Papag
thence
Cocom
their en
of the
or E. si
discharg
rancher
amazed
guards,
father H
forty ye
clination
afraid to
desire o
or weste
mas, wh
latter we
their en
him. T
met with

and, tho' they were but few in number, and their pretensions little to be depended on, they were readily admitted, that these might prevail on others to follow their example.

A month before the last expedition, namely, in October 1748, father Sedelmayer made another progress to the river Gila, in which he again travelled thro' the territories of the Papagos, and visited the Pimas of Gila; from thence he continued his journey among the Cocomaricopas, and afterwards to the Yumas their enemies, who inhabited the western banks of the river Colorado; returning on the left or E. side, till within a few days journey of it's discharge into the gulf, where he saw other rancherias of Yumas. These Indians seemed amazed at the sight of the father and his guards, not having the least remembrance of father Kino, who visited that country about forty years before. They shewed a strong inclination for pilfering some trifles; but were afraid to attempt it. The father expressed a desire of passing the river, but as the other, or western, side was inhabited by the Quiquimas, who were enemies to the Yumas, the latter were displeased at his intention of visiting their enemy's country; and refused to assist him. These and other difficulties the father met with, from a great part of his escorte, laid

him under a necessity of returning to the mission of Tubutama.

In February the following year 1749, the father intended to make another progress; and in order to execute it with the greater security, waited the arrival of the governor of Sonora, that he might make the most effectual provisions for it: but whether it was attended with success or not, I am not able to say, no account of it having been sent to Europe.

About the same time the infidel Seris and Tepocas, who lived in the mountains along the coast of the gulf, animated by the example of the Apaches, renewed their hostilities in that province with an extraordinary boldness, which obliged his excellency the viceroy to hasten the measures for removing them from their barren shores, and incorporating them with the former missions. This was under deliberation in the beginning of the same year 1749: for in May father Balthasar sent his papers to Europe; and in them he says, that from the measures taken by the viceroy for their emigration, there were great hopes of civilizing and reducing them into communities. Those orders were doubtless dictated by the greatest foresight and wisdom; but the effect it seems was not answerable, as father Sigismund Taraval, in a letter written at Guadalupe,
laxara,

laxara
had t
borca
and I
cumst
those
Father
Almag
in the
the roy
every f
to fath
Antoni
Februa
tunity
transact
and ano
fornia
come to
faction
publick
hope th
gospel,
cry pow
duction
volved
it will
pagation
ligion in

laxara, in the year 1751, says, that the Seris had that same year, in the last mission of Caborca, murdered the fathers Thomas Tello, and Henry Rohen; tho' even then the circumstance of the revolt of the Seris, nor of those murders were known at Guadalaxara. Father Thomas Tello, a native of the town of Almagro, arrived from Mexico at the mission, in the preceding year 1750; and pursuant to the royal orders, appointing two ministers in every frontier mission, was nominated colleague to father Rohen at Caborca. Father Juan Antonio Balthasar, in a letter of the 27th of February 1752, says, that by the same opportunity he sends to Europe an account of the transactions of the two last years in Pimeria; and another of a new entrance made into California in the year 1751; but never having come to my hands, I am deprived of the satisfaction of communicating those accounts to the publick. In the mean time it becomes us to hope that the blood of the ministers of the gospel, which has been spilt in California will cry powerfully to heaven for the complete reduction of these unhappy savages, now involved in the shadow of death; and that it will infallibly fix the establishment, propagation, and security of the christian religion in those extreme parts of the globe.

212 HISTORY OF, &c.

On both sides, in Pimeria and California, a door is now opened for speeding the gospel. On the north side of both are vast countries, inhabited by infidel nations, who never have heard of christianity, and the glad tidings of salvation it offers to the human race. And, surely, it is an undertaking highly conformable both to the dictates of humanity, and the precepts of the gospel, to convert such multitudes of the human species, from their brutal and enormous vices to the paths of virtue and religion.

A

H

C

APP

T

nation
said in t
graphic
counts
and wes
tinent,

A
NATURAL and CIVIL
HISTORY
OF
CALIFORNIA.

PART IV,
APPENDICES to the account of
CALIFORNIA.

INTRODUCTION.

A
THAT the account of California, which
I now submit to the publick, may be
as complete and useful to the Spanish
nation as possible; I have added to what is
said in the beginning of the first part of its geo-
graphical situation, the most authentick ac-
counts hitherto known concerning its eastern
and western coasts, and junction with the con-
tinent, the subject of such long contests; and

likewise the accounts we have of the adjacent islands, land, and seas, these having a natural and political connection with California. The reason of this is sufficiently evident: California, considered in itself, is the most disagreeable, barren, and wretched country in the world, But notwithstanding these disagreeable particulars, the conquest of it from the first discovery of the new world in Cortes's time, has been attempted with very great expences to the crown of Spain: and at length this desired reduction has been accomplished by the jesuits: and our sovereign has lately taken the most effectual measures towards the completing of what may be wanting in this enterprise; as we have already related in the preceding parts. But it may be asked on what account is California of such importance to the crown of Spain, and the Spanish jesuits its subjects? whence this mighty concern about it? wherefore is its conquest preferred to that of many other countries of both Americas, like it inhabited by infidel savages; countries in a milder climate, rich and fertile; countries which might be reduced and held at a much less expence; and in which a much greater number of souls might be brought within the bosom of the church?

It

It i
tion to
indeed
I answe
tageous
it so va
prefera
rica.
tion al
these, b
religion
this, th
peated a
conquest
were just
sent muc
for this
ever still

The p
collected
parts of
shall offe
essential
guous to
New Spai
sea, from
Acapulco
California
under no

It is my duty to give all possible satisfaction to these reasonable questions: and this is indeed the principal intention of the 4th part. I answer the first in general: It is the advantageous situation of California which renders it so valuable. This makes the conquest of it preferable to that of any other country in America. Though so wretched and poor, its situation alone renders it more important than all these, both with regard to the propagation of religion, and the good of the state. Add to this, that if the expensive endeavours and repeated attempts of the Spanish nation for the conquest of California in the two last centuries were just and prudent, the nation has at present much more powerful and weighty motives for this enterprise than the former, which however still subsist.

The proof of these assertions may be partly collected from several passages in the former parts of this work; and partly from what we shall offer in this 4th part. California has an essential connection with the provinces contiguous to it, and belonging to the continent of New Spain. The American coasts on the South sea, from cape de Corientes, and even from Acapulco itself northwards, are not safe, whilst California remains in the hands of savages, and under no subjection to the Spanish crown. The

inhabitants of these coasts cannot follow the rich pearl-fishery in the gulf of California, nor can the provinces from Acapulco to the river Colorado carry on any maritime commerce. The mean canoes of the Californians are not indeed much to be dreaded, but California has several times been a shelter for privateers and pirates, who have from thence scoured all those seas, taken a great many Spanish ships, disturbed the whole commerce of the Pacifick ocean, and filled those remote provinces with alarms. What would be the consequence should any European power settle colonies, and build forts on the coast of California. Admiral Anson according to the account of his voyage, was of opinion, that if he could have made himself master of Baldivia on the coast of Chili, he should have been able, with that advantage, to have made the vast empire of Peru tremble. Though this be the only conjecture, it cannot be denied but that if any foreign power should find means of building fortifications in California and maintain its superiority there, the empire of Mexico would be in the utmost danger.

California is also of equal importance for enlarging the king's dominions in North America. We have seen that the jesuit missions have not only reduced the rich provinces of Culiacan, Cinaloa Ostimuri, Yaqui, and Sonora; but

but ha
upper
and C
provin
mains
Tepoc
coast o
and, as
murder
lawless
will al
among
easy b
as fath

If th
intende
Americ
not onl
but ext
Gila an
of Cali
San Di
mounta
Sebastia
quis de
what ex
on, we
along e
ducing

but have likewise penetrated to the bay and upper Pimeria, even to the great rivers of Gila and Colorado, and taken a survey of the Moqui provinces adjacent to new Mexico. What remains is to reduce the Papagos, Guaimas Tepocas, and Seris, who inhabit the extreme coast of new Spain on the gulf of California, and, as we have related, not long since revolted, murdered their missionaries and joined with the lawless Apaches. The reduction of these Indians will always be very difficult, if the entrance among them be made on the land side, but very easy by passing from California to their coasts, as father Salva-Tierra has sufficiently proved.

If the missions and Spanish settlements are intended to be carried on towards the north of America with safety and regularity, they must not only be joined to the rest with New Mexico; but extended from the latter beyond the rivers Gila and Colorado to the furthest known coasts of California on the South sea; that is to Puerto San Diego, Puerto de Monte-rey, the snowy mountains, cape Mendocino, cape Blanco, San Sebastian, and the river discovered by the marquis de Aquillar in forty three degrees. With what expedition might this conquest be carried on, were the missionaries to go at one time along each side of the gulf of California, reducing the interjacent nations till they all met
on

on the banks of the river Colorado; and proceed jointly from thence till they arrived at the abovementioned coasts, harbours, capes, and rivers on the South sea? How much more, if, at the same time, the northern Californian missions on the South sea were extended from the coast of San Xavier and the islands of los Dolores in 28 deg. lately surveyed by father Taraval, to the aforesaid harbours of S. Diego de Monte Rey, and the others where the missionaries of California and Pimeria, who had joined at the rivers Colorado and Gila, were to conclude their progress?

The immense distances from Mexico of these two rivers and the provinces they water, and especially of the countries near Monte Rey and Mendozino, render it impossible to supply, by land, the missionaries and the other Spaniards with cloaths, utensils, and necessaries. It is therefore requisite to open a maritime communication, by erecting forts near all the harbours on the coast of the South sea, between the latitude of 30 and 40 degrees: and also in the gulf of California to the mouth of the river Colorado at the 33d degree of lat. Without such provisions for a maritime communication, the missions in these remote provinces can be by no means maintained; much less Spanish colonies, towns, villages, and farms be erected. But if
Cali-

Californ
ed, how
How ca
ces mad
coasts o
provement
of Pimer
on the
could th
any cont
sula of C
savage In
ation, ha
portance
ment of
mentation
rica.

It may
ferent aff
be exten
Mendocin
maintaini
pear extra
in all gre
to be for
cution of
nation act
end, is sel
which wo

California and the reduction of it be relinquished, how can these improvements be made? How can harbours be discovered, and entrances made either on the gulf of California, or the coasts of the South-sea? and were these improvements made by entering only on the side of Pimeria and Sonora, into the provinces lying on the west side of the river Colorado, how could they be able to maintain themselves for any considerable time, while the whole peninsula of California was inhabited by infidel and savage Indians? Thus California, by its situation, has been, and still is, of the highest importance for the preservation and advancement of the christian religion, and the augmentation of the Spanish sovereignty in America.

It may perhaps, to some seem a very indifferent affair, whether his majesty's dominions be extended to the river Colorado and cape Mendocino, and the reasons for making and maintaining such a conquest may possibly appear extravagant. But with regard to the first, in all great undertakings, the general plan is to be formed immediately, though the execution of it may prove a work of time. A nation acting without a plan, in pursuit of any end, is seldom known to reap the advantages which would necessarily in time flow from it.

Secondly,

Secondly, experience has shewn, that within the space of a hundred years, the jesuit missions and his majesty's dominions in North America are extended from Cinaloa in 20 degrees to the rivers Colorado and Gila in 35. The Sierra or mountains of Topaia and Tarahumara, together with Nayarith have already been reduced. The ancient missions of the Parral, Parras Tepehuanes, Cinaloa, &c. And a tract of 300 leagues of California, from cape San Lucas to near the 30th degree of lat. have likewise been subdued: and all this has been performed since the middle of the last century; and with very little assistance from the government in any of these enterprises.

But if the conquest and preservation of California, has been, and is essential to the advancement and security of the catholick religion, and the Spanish dominions in the other provinces of America, it is equally advantageous to the Philippine islands and their commerce with new Spain. It is not necessary to form so many political schemes for the navigation and commerce of the South sea, as cardinal Alberoni seems to imagine. One single galeon performing annually one voyage from Manilla and Acapulco, and back again, is found to be sufficient; but without this commerce, those
rich,

rich, po
not be
being in
We hav
sity of p
that this
for want
niards ha
even in
lastly tha
taken by
selves in
must nec
pine islan
of reducin
questione
others of
ing to re
or Musco
the northe
to the So
to civiliz
are actual
and have
several pa
ted and m
own coast
and, cross
parts of S

rich, populous, and commodious islands could not be preserved, though they are far from being improved to the greatest advantage. We have seen that this ship is under a necessity of putting into some port in her voyage; that this can only be done in California; that for want of such a port great numbers of Spaniards have perished by the length of the voyage, even in time of the most profound peace: lastly that this galeon has been several times taken by the enemy, who have sheltered themselves in California, within sight of which she must necessarily pass. If therefore the Philippine islands be worth keeping, can the utility of reducing and settling California be any longer questioned? But besides these motives there are others of equal strength, and equally interesting to religion and the state. The Russians, or Muscovites, whose vast empire extends to the northern extremities of Asia, and even near to the South sea, are not only endeavouring to civilize the natives of those countries, but are actually erecting forts and planting colonies; and have already made docks and arsenals in several parts, where they have built ships, fitted and mann'd them; taken surveys of their own coasts, sailed as far as the islands of Japan; and, crossing the South sea, landed in several parts of Spanish America.

In

In one voyage made in 1741, the Russians landed on this very coast in the latitude of 55 degrees 36 minutes, not above 12 degrees from cape Blanco, the most northern part of California hitherto known. And is it not natural to think that the Russians in future voyages, will come down as low as cape Blanco: and if California be abandoned by the Spaniards even as far as cape San Lucas? and we may well suppose that they who to-day take a view of the coasts and country, may to-morrow determine to plant colonies there. The last Spanish garrison on the Northern American coasts of the South-sea, is that of cape San Lucas at the southern point of California, and to the southward of the tropick of Cancer: and even this is but weak and lately settled. But along the immense extent of the coast northward, Spain has not one single fortification. How shall we hinder the Russians from making settlements there, unless we be beforehand with them? would it be proper that the Muscovites should become our neighbours and rivals, and establish the Greek church in California?

The repeated attempts of the English for finding a passage to the South-sea by the north of America and Hudson's bay, are known to all the world. The last was undertaken in the
spring

spring
day suc
come do
make th
New Me
lorado,
lastly of
which b
in the no
have info
sign of
Indies, er
ments on
nia towa
very par
Whoever
position o
with wha
North-we
many con
that the f
not be su
one day c
ever happ
condition
of treaties
Georgia,
sylvania,
vinces of

spring of the year 1753. If they should one day succeed in this, why may not the English come down through their conquests, and even make themselves masters of the provinces of New Mexico, Moqui, the rivers Gila and Colorado, Pimeria, Papagos, and Apaches; and lastly of the northern part of California itself, which borders on our missions and garrisons in the north of America. The publick papers have informed us that the English had a design of crossing the South-sea from the East Indies, erecting fortifications, and making settlements on the coast of America above California towards Hudson's bay; that is, in those very parts which the Russians have visited. Whoever is acquainted with the present disposition of the English nation, and has heard with what zeal and ardour the project for a North-west passage has been espoused by many considerable persons, will be convinced that the scheme is not romantick; and it would not be surprizing if the execution of it should one day come under deliberation. If this should ever happen, I would ask, what would be the condition of our possessions? would the faith of treaties be a sufficient protection? Jamaica, Georgia, Carolina, Virginia, New York, Pennsylvania, Newfoundland, and the other provinces of that nation in America were discovered

vered by Spaniards; and for a long time made part of our dominions: yet at present they are in the hands of the English; and with equal ease may they settle on the coasts on the north of California, unless we prevent them by attempting the reduction of it, without delay. I therefore beg leave to repeat it that in all times, but especially at present, the conquest of the poor and barren province of California has been considered as of the utmost importance to religion and the state; and more desirable than that of many happier countries in America.

It should be remembered that we have already shewn the situation of California itself, of Sonora, Pimeria, and other provinces contiguous to it, and the continent of New Spain. All that remains therefore to be done is to add the most authentick memoirs existing both ancient and modern, relating to the two coasts of this peninsula: and this is the intention of the first appendix in this fourth part, which contains a short description of Gomara; the voyage of captain Sebastian Vizcaino in the year 1603; the last survey of the gulf of California, to its furthest extremity the river Colorado in 1746, by father Fernando Consag: and lastly the short description of the famous English navigator capt. Woods Rogers. Next to these

is

is the a
of the l
since ra
mention
of that
with Ca
nity of
and of f
salutary
state; w
terest of

A short
of

IN ord
know
California
I shall l
count giv
a careful
de Herre
of the best
only that
point of
was then,
hame.

VOL. I

is the account given of California in the voyage of the English commander George Anson, esq; since raised to the peerage; and wherein he mentions the commerce of the Philippines, and of that which he supposes these islands carry on with California: this will give us an opportunity of correcting several pernicious mistakes; and of forming in the reader's mind the most salutary ideas for the good of religion and the state; without any regard to the temporal interest of the society.

A P P E N D I X I.

A short description of the outward coast of CALIFORNIA by Gomara.

IN order to shew what was most certainly known concerning the outward coast of California, before captain Vizcaino's survey, I shall lay before the reader the succinct account given by Francisco Lopez de Gomara, a careful writer, and whose geography Antonio de Herrera has chiefly followed, as an author of the best judgment and intelligence, observing only that what he calls Punta de Balenas is the point of California or cape San Lucas, but was then, both in books and maps called, by that name.

VOL. II.

Q

the

Extract from the XIIth chapter of the history of the Indies by Francisco Lopez de Gomara.

From Mira Florez bay to the Punta de Balenas, by the way of Puerto Escondido, Belen, Puerto de Fuegos, and La Bahia de Canoas and Pearl island is above two hundred and twenty leagues. Punta de Balenas is under the tropick, and eighty leagues from cape Corrientes, and between these capes runs the sea of Cortes, which resembles the Adriatick, and is of a reddish colour. From the Punta de Balenas to Bahia del Abad, is one hundred leagues along the coast, and from the latter to cape del Enganno, which lies in about 30 deg. 30 min. lat. is one hundred more, though some make the distance greater.

From cape del Enganno to Cabo de Cruz, is about fifty leagues: from Cabo de Cruz to Puerto de Sardinias in 36 deg. is about one hundred and ten leagues. Along this coast are the Ancon de San Miguel, Bahia de los Fuegos and Costa blanca. From Sardinias to the Sierra Nivadas or snowy mountains, is one hundred and fifty leagues, by the way of Puerto de Todos Santos, Cabo de Galera, Cabo Nevado, Bahia de los Pinos. The Sierras Nevados or
the

the snow
further
maps.
dred an
within
enland.

Narrati
bastia
surve
CAL

The t
diana, by
Francisca
the year
in 1725,
referred th
ing the pr
Vizcaino's
impression
part of th
that illust
Gonzalez
the board
valuable v
search, co

the snowy mountains lie in 40 deg. and is the furthest country on this side inserted in the maps. Yet the coast runs northward five hundred and ten leagues further to us, to include within this vast island both Labrador and Greenland.

APPENDIX II.

Narrative of the voyage of captain Sebastian Vizcaino in the year 1602, for surveying the outward or western coast CALIFORNIA on the South-sea.

The three volumes of the *Monarchia Indiana*, by father Juan de Torquemada, a learned Franciscan, having been published at Seville in the year 1615, and a new edition at Madrid in 1725, it may be thought sufficient to have referred the reader to those books, without swelling the present work by a narrative of captain Vizcaino's voyage: but the copies of the first impression are extremely scarce, the greatest part of them having been lost at sea: and when that illustrious patron of literature Don Andres Gonzalez de Barcia, privy counsellor, and one of the board of treasury, was desirous of having that valuable work reprinted, after all his diligent search, could meet with only three copies of it

in Madrid; and the impression was made from that in the library of the imperial college of jesuits, father Martin de Raxas having generously parted with it for that purpose. However since this second impression the books of the Monarchia Indiana are become scarce, and captain Vizcaino's narrative is essentially necessary towards an exact account of California: and though some readers will find here what they have already seen in father Torquemada's volumes, yet I ought not to deprive a much greater number, who have not that work, from the pleasure of the perusal, and who will be glad to have every thing relating to California collected here, especially as this work is not intended only for European readers, but likewise for those in America, who trade in these remote seas and countries where other books are not so easily procured.

I was extremely desirous of finding captain Sebastian Vizcaino's narrative and the representations of the council to his majesty Philip III. especially the maps, plans, charts of his voyage and discoveries, in order to communicate the whole to the publick. Accordingly at my request search was made in the secretary's office of the council of the Indies. But in this intention of being serviceable to the publick I have been disappointed.

Extract

Extract f
Indiana,

In the
viceroyship
Mendoza,
Luzon, by
discovered
a town of
sea; these
of 42 deg.
called Cabo
roy, by w
ing pretty
thence to
Terra Firm
they laid th
was desirou
Mendozino
own expenc
duct it, cou
called San J
the continu
ble to conti
jesty also w
his father's
covery, and
hereafter.

Extract from Lib. V. of the Monarchia Indiana, by father Juan de Torquemada.

In the reign of Philip III. and during the viceroyship in New Spain of Don Antonio de Mendoza, when the navigation to the isles of Luzon, by us called the Philippinés, was first discovered by some ships built at La Navidad, a town of New Spain on the coast of the South-sea; these ships in their return near the lat. of 42 deg. perceived a point of land which they called Cabo Mendozino in honour of the viceroy, by whom they had been sent; and keeping pretty near the shore, it appeared that from thence to La Navidad, was one continued Terra Firma. On their arrival at New Spain, they laid this discovery before the viceroy, who was desirous that the whole coast as far as cape Mendozino should be carefully surveyed at his own expence. But the person appointed to conduct it, could reach no farther than the harbour called San Jago, now La Magdalena in 25 deg. the continual N. W. winds rendering it impossible to continue his course any farther. His majesty also was informed that other viceroys by his father's orders had attempted the same discovery, and had also failed, as will be related hereafter. His majesty also found among other

papers a narrative delivered by some foreigners to his father, giving an account of many remarkable particulars, which they saw in that country, when driven thither by stress of weather, from the coast of Newfoundland; adding that they had passed from the N. sea to the S. by the streight of Anian, which lies beyond cape Mendozino; and that they had arrived at a populous and opulent city, walled and well fortified, the inhabitants living under a regular polity, and were a sensible and courteous people; with many other particulars well worth a further enquiry. On the other hand, he was also informed that the ships in their return from China to New Spain, were in great danger; and that they met with very bad weather about cape Mendozino, and therefore for the safety of the ships, it would be highly proper to survey the coast from thence to Acapulco, in order to provide a place on the coast for them to put in at, as they usually belong to his majesty. For these and other reasons, he ordered the count de Monte Rey, viceroy of New Spain, to cause the discovery to be undertaken with all possible care and diligence, and at the royal expence.

Accordingly, count de Monte-Rey, desirous of accomplishing what his majesty had so positively ordered, had recourse to persons, from
whose

whose
pect
meas
resolv
the u
bastia
this v
qualit
tain T
deserv
For g
time e
of Cal
Spain
ing as
covery
most c
made
was ca
securin
of adr
Gomez
served
and in
had be
entrust
appear
he pre
service

whose knowledge and experience he might expect information, in order to pursue the best measures for this purpose. The method being resolved on, the necessaries were prepared with the utmost care and dispatch; and general Sebastian Vizcaino appointed captain-general for this voyage, as he had before acted in that quality in California. The admiral was captain Toribio Gomez de Corvan, both persons deserving the great confidence reposed in them. For general Sebastian Vizcaino was at that time employed in the pacification and conquest of California: and was of all persons in New Spain the best acquainted with that coast, having as we have already related gone on a discovery there in the year 1594: and was the most concerned that the discovery should be made pursuant to his majesty's orders, as it was carried on at his expence. For the better securing the success of this enterprise, the post of admiral was conferred on captain Toribio Gomez, as a consummate seaman, having served his majesty many years in cruising ships; and in recompence of his fidelity and courage had been made captain of the *Pataches*, and entrusted with many affairs of consequence, as appears from the papers and certificates which he presented to the viceroy in testimony of his services. He was immediately sent to the pro-

vinces of Honduras and Guatemala in search of two ships, having for assistants Sebastian Melendez, a land-officer, and Antonio Florez a pilot: the viceroy also sent ensign Juan de Acevedo Texeda to Acapulco in order to get every thing ready there for the voyage, and to superintend the building of a small frigate. The general was directed to deliver in an account of what he should want for the voyage, provisions, stores, seamen, and soldiers: and was completely furnished with every thing. Three bare-footed Carmelites, namely, father Andrez de la Assumption, father Antonio de la Ascension, and father Thomas de Aquino, were ordered to accompany him. And because as Cicero says, great things are never accomplished merely by strength and activity of body, unless conducted with the wisdom and foresight of prudent and experienced counsellors, the viceroy appointed captain Alonso Estevan Peguero, a person of great valour and long experience, who had served in Flanders, and also with Magellan; and captain Gaspar de Alarcon, a native of Bretagne, distinguished for his prudence and courage; and for sea affairs several pilots and masters of Ships; likewise captain Geronimo Martin, who went as Cosmographer, in order to make draughts of the countries discovered, for the greater perspi-

city

cuity
to hi
action
provi
Valve
likewi
pulco
and to
men,
panies
was J
Migu

At
called
them
and a
respec
gious,
that th
the 7th
tains f
pulco,
20th c

Ever
the ge
board
pointe
the Ca
from

cuity of the account intended to be transmitted to his majesty of the discoveries and transactions in this voyage. Every thing being thus provided, the count ordered don Francisco de Valverde, agent for the treasury at Mexico and likewise for the king's ships, to send to Acapulco what stores and money he had by him, and to pay the foldiers, who were all picked men, and formed one of the most lightly companies ever raised in New Spain. The ensign was Juan Francisco Suriano and the serjeant Miguel de Legar.

At the time of their departure, the viceroy called them together; and recommended to them the affair on which they were sent, peace and amity among themselves, obedience and respect to superiors, and especially to the religious, on whom he chiefly founded the hopes that their voyage would prove successful. On the 7th of March 1601, the religious and captains set out from Mexico and arrived at Acapulco, where they were to embark on the 20th of the same month.

Every thing being in readiness for the voyage, the general issued orders for all to repair on board the ships to which they had been appointed: this being punctually complied with, the Capitana, Almiranta, and the frigate sailed from Acapulco at four in the afternoon on
 Sunday

HISTORY OF

Sunday the 5th of May in the year 1602. They had with them a barco longo for surveying bays and creeks and other services inconvenient to ships of burden. After standing out to sea about two leagues, they took their departure and steered N. W. that being the direction of the western coast. During the whole year a N. W. wind generally prevails all along this coast; and this proved a continual obstacle to the voyage from the time of leaving Acapulco till they reached cape San. Sebastian, which lies beyond cape Mendocino, being continually at sea, during nine months; during which time they underwent the greatest hardships.

The wind being thus contrary, and blowing hard, there was no possibility of making any way unless by tacking, which is a very great fatigue to the men; and if the wind be fresh, and the currents set with the wind, instead of advancing a ship, drives to leeward. But when the wind seemed to render their progress impracticable, it changed in their favour, by which means the squadron reached Puerta de la Navidad, on Sunday the 19th of May at five in the evening. There was a necessity of putting in here, the ships labouring very much for want of ballast; the cargo not being of a weight proportionate to their burden and dimensions. Besides the Capitana had made a
great

gre
for
with
both
ter,
met
the
inha
whic
cape
Chin
also
harbo
bouri
kinds
howe
quifit
ries,
nuing
as be
Whit
a sur
along
noon,
are tv
near
the co
river
was t

great deal of water, and there was a necessity for stopping the leak; all which was done with the utmost dispatch, and at the same time both ships supplied themselves with wood, water, and a quantity of provisions, in which they met with no manner of difficulty or obstruction, the country being a part of New Spain, and the inhabitants christians. In this harbour the ships, which discovered the Philippine islands and cape Mendocino, were built. The galeons from China, before the discovery of Acapulco, used also to frequent this port. It is a very good harbour, has plenty of wood, and the neighbouring country pleasant, abounding in all kinds of cattle and other provisions. They however tarried here no longer than was requisite for supplying themselves with necessaries, sailing from thence on the 22d, continuing their course under the same difficulties as before, and arrived at cape Corrientes on Whitsunday being the 26th. Here they took a survey of the country, and then proceeded along shore; and on the 2d of June about noon, reached the islands of Mazathan. These are two islands of a middling size, lying very near to each other, so that between them and the continent is a good rode into which a large river from New Galicia empties itself. This was the place where the celebrated English navigator

vigator sir Thomas Cavendish careen'd his ship, while he was waiting for the return of the Chinese fleet to plunder them. The Capitana and Almiranta came to an anchor in this rode to wait for the frigate, which soon after their leaving la Navidad had been separated from them: but she had got before them into the river. The general and admiral together with the religious and captains, went ashore on one of these islands, where they found an infinite number of sea birds, which breed there, their young not being then able to fly. They live chiefly on pilchards, sardines, and other small fish. These birds are nearly of the bigness of geese, with a bill little short of half a yard in length; their legs are long like those of a stork; their feet and bill shaped like those of a goose. These fowls have a large crop, in which they keep their fish for their young, throwing them out upon the ground before them.

Here are also a great many wild goats and deer, together with a fruit which was found to be of great benefit to the sick in their return, as shall be related in its proper place. The inhabitants of the continent here are christians, and consequently friends: and the country itself is called the province of Acaponeta or Chametha. Here the gulf of California along the coast of New Spain begins; and betwixt

30 a
Cina
calle
whic
T
out
mou
islan
trem
distan
leagu
ing t
were
of an
for ne
each
fifty
was f
which
long
proac
morni
as to
Almir
other
given
where
frigate

30 and 40 leagues from these islands towards Cinaloa and Culiacan, the Rio Grande now called the Toluca, discharges itself into the sea, which is there called the river de Rarito.

The ships having found the frigate sailed out that very same day, in order to cross the mouth or arm of the sea, betwixt the said islands and cape San Lucas, which is the extreme point of the continent of California: the distance from side to side, being about 60 leagues; and on the 9th of June in the evening they made the land of California. As they were standing towards cape San Lucas in quest of an harbour, such a thick fog came on, that for near a day and a half they had no sight of each other; and the Almiranta was within fifty paces of a reef of rocks, from which she was saved by a sudden clearing of the fog, which I may call providential, as it lasted only long enough to shew the danger they were approaching. This happened about seven in the morning; at nine the sun rarefied the fog so as to give a little light: by which means the Almiranta and Capitana had sight of each other; and coming within hearing, orders were given to stand in for a bay near the said cape, where to the great joy of all, they found the frigate at an anchor.

The

The squadron entering this bay on the feast of St. Barnabas, it was called after the name of that saint. As they were coming to an anchor near the shore and furling the sails, they observed along the coast a great number of Indians naked, with bows and arrows in their hands, and some armed with spears; and who by their shoutings and throwing the sand up in the air, seemed to be calling to the men in the ships. On this the general ordered the boats to be got ready; and that some soldiers should take their arms, go ashore, and get intelligence from the Indians, and also endeavour to know the meaning of their shouts and throwing about the sand; accordingly the general, the admiral, the three religious, and some officers, went in the boats with twelve soldiers armed with their harquabuses and lighted matches. When the boats were near the shore, the Indians seeing such a number of armed people, retired in great consternation to an eminence, in order to secure themselves if the strangers should attempt any thing against them. All the people in the boats landed; but as they advanced towards the Indians, they retired; till father Antonion, de la Ascension, in order to allure the Indians to a friendly conference, went up alone towards them; and by his signs and gestures so far prevailed, that they

staid

staid
embr
mann
groun
down
advan
as the
desire
of bi
seeme
and si
ship a
colour
was a
genera
groun
to fat
seats, a
them,
of an
retired
After
the ot
not far
clear a
now to
by the
tity of
the la

staid for him; and coming up to them, he embraced them all in the most affectionate manner. They laid down their arms on the ground, and intimated to him by signs to sit down with them, and order the others not to advance unless they would lay down their arms as they had done. Father Antonio did as they desired, and called to a negro to bring a basket of bisket to distribute among them. They seemed greatly pleased at the sight of the negro; and signified to him that they lived in friendship and correspondence with a people of his colour; and that not far from thence there was a negro village. In the mean time the general and admiral laid their arms on the ground; and with the two religious came up to father Antonio. The Indians kept their seats, and accepted of the beads and toys given them, though not without some apprehension of an ill design; and with these little presents retired to their rancherias very much pleased. After the Indians were gone, the general with the others walked about the country; where, not far from the shore, they met with a pond of clear and pleasant water: and the day drawing now towards a close, they retired to some rocks by the sea side. Here they found a great quantity of sardines and pilchards, which, flying from the large fish to the water's edge, had been
 thrown

thrown ashore by the breakers. And these served the people of the squadron that night, and the following day; when they found on the shore heaps of pearl-oyster-shells, so smooth and glittering, by the reflection of the sun, as to render the appearance of the strand truly magnificent: and hence the great advantages which may be derived from the pearl-fishery, may in some measure be conceived. Under the above rocks the general ordered a large tent to be pitched for the reception of an altar; where during their stay, the religious daily said mass.

In this bay the squadron lay some days to wait for the change of the moon; repair the ships, and take in wood and water; and as every ship carried nets, the boats constantly went a fishing, the bay abounding with great variety, as soles, lobsters, pearl-oysters, &c. The soil is very fruitful, healthy, and in a good climate; level and capable of fine improvements, abounds with rabbits, hares, deer, lions; tygers, wood-pigeons, and quails. Among its trees are the fig, the lentisk, the pitahaya, &c: an infinite number of plum-trees, which, instead of resin or gum, copiously emit a very fine and fragrant incense. As to the plums I never saw any but what were small and green; and consequently wanted the rich taste of ours, though

though
highly
vantag
there b
sea in t
then fu
to the t
to the
tyger sk
formed.
fastened
which
mong th
oodies w
cheerful,
people.

In this
Anne in
years ago
taking ou
by which
edge: bu
Spaniards
her balla
fortunatel
ards it se
woman,
very day.
they did n
VOL. II

though they who have been in California highly commend them : but what is more advantageous, salt-works might be erected here ; there being a lake of salt-water formed by the sea in the time of the S. E. winds, and it was then full of a fine clear salt : the Indians came to the tent where mafs was laid, and brought to the general and the soldiers, deer, lion, and tyger skins, cotton caps and little nets, curiously formed. Thefe Indians were naked, but faftened in their hair every thing they met with which has a glittering appearance. Some mong them are red-haired. They dawb their oodies with black and white colours; are a cheerful, docile, courteous, and good natured people.

In this bay the Englifh who took the St. Anne in her return from the Philippines fome years ago, put the people afhore, and after taking out of her all the goods, fet her on fire, by which means fhe was burnt to the water's edge : but the wreck being driven afhore, the Spaniards went on board, and having thrown her ballaft over-board, and erected jury-mafts, fortunately reached Acapulco. Thefe Spaniards it feems carried off by force an Indian woman, which the natives lament to this very day. And this was the true reason that they did not feem very fond of contracting an

intimacy with the people of the squadron, lest another misfortune of that kind should happen : this I mention that proper care may be taken not to give offence to these people ; as such usage must naturally alienate them from agreeing to terms of peace, or giving any credit to the Spaniards who preach the gospel. Here part of the goods carried for the soldiers at the king's expence, was distributed among them to their great relief and satisfaction. In the mean time the change of the moon being past, with the appearance of fair weather, the general ordered every thing to be taken on board, and the squadron at midnight left the bay to continue their voyage ; but they had not sailed above three leagues, when it blew so hard at N. W. that the frigate not being able to keep the sea, made again for the bay, whither the Capitana and Almiranta followed her, that she might not be left alone. Three times the squadron failed out of the bay, and were often through the violence of the wind and the roughness of the sea, obliged to put back. At last it was resolved to leave the barco longo which the Capitana had in tow at the fresh-water lake in the bay, that she might tack and work the more easily : and the wind being abated, and the sea somewhat smooother, they again on the 5th of July set sail, which was the fourth time ;

and

and
in the
keep
liged
In
ranta
Califo
Thus
ple th
ting b
ranta
nue he
course
determ
could
near it
highlan
they di
account
Sierra d
not how
but the
gained b
cular ci
lulled, t
blow, t
At last
gale spr
the har

and by continual tacking made some progress in their voyage, though the frigate could not keep company with the two ships, and was obliged to run in under the land.

In the mean time the Capitana and Almiranta stood off to sea, till they lost sight of California, to try if they could make any way. Thus the frigate was left behind; and the people thought themselves very happy in getting back to the bay. The Capitana and Almiranta supposing that the frigate would continue her voyage under the land, pursued their course by continual tacking; however they determined to make for the shore, to see if they could get sight of the frigate; and coming near it on the 8th of the month, facing some highlands they were becalmed, that in a week they did not gain a single league; and on this account they gave that high land the name of Sierra del enfado or Mount Tedious. This was not however wholly owing to the want of wind; but the currents were so strong, that what was gained by one, was lost by the other: but a particular circumstance was, that when the wind lulled, the current ceased; and when it began to blow, the tides ran with their former rapidity. At last however, a delightful and moderate gale sprung up, which carried the ships near to the harbour de la Magdalena, otherwise called

St. Jago, where such a thick fog arose, that one man could not see another at the distance of six paces. The Capitana stood in for the land in order to take a view of that harbour, concluding that the Almiranta followed her; and finding it convenient, entered it on the 20th of the said month. The Almiranta, to avoid running on any shoal or rock during the fog, stood from the land, that when it became light, the Capitana was not to be seen, nor was there any appearance of an harbour thereabouts: at last concluding that she was ahead, the Almiranta continued her voyage: and thus they lost each other, till they fortunately met again at the island of Cerros.

The Capitana as we already observed, stood into Magdalena harbour, supposing that the Almiranta would follow her. The very next day the general ordered some soldiers to ascend a high mountain which commanded an extensive view over the sea, in order to look out for the Almiranta, and in case they saw her to make a smoke: Accordingly, they kept a large smoke all the day, the ship being all the time in sight; but imagining the smoke to be made by the Indians, as they had done all along the coast, on seeing any ships, that the people might come ashore, the Almiranta kept her course in quest of the Capitana; looking into every bay, island,

or harbour, to see if they could find the Capitana which now was a great way behind. The general used many other endeavours for finding her out, but to no effect. The Capitana being thus alone on St. Magdalen's day, the father commissary and father Thomas said mass ashore: and on account of this festival the bay was called la Magdalena; it is very spacious with several safe creeks, and anchoring places; has two entrances, and through it a wide arm of the sea runs up into the country. Within this bay they found a weyer half a league in length, of large pieces of timber, which the Indians had made for their fisheries. In the country round the bay were great numbers of Indians naked, and arm with bows and arrows; they were well made, and very sociable. On their approaching the Spaniards, they offered them their bows and arrows in token of peace; they likewise brought frankincense, their country abounding with trees which produce it, being a sort of plumbtree. Within this bay is a smaller, abounding with excellent muscles. But they could get no intelligence of any water, except in a cavity among the rocks; and what they had there was excessively bad: some casks were however filled; but under extreme dejection on account of the Almiranta and the frigate.

We have already observed that the frigate had returned to St. Barnabas bay, without knowing any thing of the Capitana and Almiranta ; but the wind being abated, she sailed a second time in quest of them ; and coming near the land they saw a large bay, which they entered, hoping to find them there. This was one of the entrances which we have mentioned belonging to this bay : and here they met with great numbers of Indians peaceably disposed, and as a sign of it offered their bows and arrows to some of her people who went ashore. But not meeting here with the ships they sought, they returned the same way they came in, and called the bay Eugannosa, i. e. deceitful, on account of their disappointment. This bay is now called el Puerto del Marques or San Jago. They kept coasting farther on ; and meeting with the other part of Magdalena bay, sailed up it and there found the Capitana. The general having the frigate now with him, gave orders for leaving the place and going in search of the Almiranta being certain that she had proceeded on her voyage. Accordingly the Capitana and the frigate sailed out of the bay on Sunday morning the 28th of July ; and that the frigate might keep company, orders were given that the Capitana should take her in tow.

About

AL
hard
a gre
bay,
rous,
sides,
stood
The
pleasa
inland
had fi
there
order
gate
disapp
that c
return
genera
Christ
Almir
league
in the
a rive
sioned
fresh v
those
six fa
have
ing on

About five leagues beyond Magdalen bay, a hard gale came on at N. W. which gave them a great deal of trouble: for standing in towards a bay, the entrance appeared to be very dangerous, as they plainly saw breaches on both sides, so that instead of entering it, they again stood off to sea in quest of the Almiranta. The whole coast beyond this place is level and pleasant, and has only a few mountains in the inland country. On the 30th of July, they had sight of a bay, which seemed to be formed there by the issue of a river. The general in order to have a certain account, sent in the frigate to survey it. But here again they were disappointed by the breakers at the entrance, that on calling a council, it was determined to return and make a report of the obstacle to the general. This spot or bay which is called San Christoval, had been before surveyed by the Almiranta; which came to an anchor two leagues from it, and captain Peguero going in the ship's boat to view it, saw that it was a river, and that these breakers were occasioned by the collision of the current of the fresh water with the flood of the sea. For at those breakers in the entrance there was above six fathoms water; and the Capitana would have gone in, had not the night been coming on apace. He therefore returned on board,

not knowing what might happen before the morning, and made the above report. The bay was called San Christoval from its being surveyed on the anniversary of that saint, and the same night they continued their voyage, till they came to the bay called las Balenas, from whence the Capitana and frigate continued their voyage in search of the Almiranta and also of fresh water, of which they both were now in great want. At a considerable distance they saw a large bay, into which the general sent the frigate, in hopes it might suit their circumstances: but on approaching, it was found to be as it were intercepted by shoals: and accordingly making a signal to the Capitana not to come nearer, they jointly prosecuted their voyage.

This bay also had been already surveyed by the Almiranta, who gave it the name of Bahia de Balenas or Whale bay, on account of the multitudes of that large fish they saw there, being drawn hither by the abundance of several kinds of fish. The vast flights of birds and fowls are also so great that they cannot be seen without astonishment both for their number and variety; and like the whales all prey on the small fish. The country along the bay is pretty populous, and the inhabitants affable and friendly to the highest degree. They
are

are
tha
Ind
nets
and
but
not
peop
small
foldi
see r
Indi
oyate
Span
not p
them
water
count
great
be p
peop
carrie
neigh
Th
hopes
might
wood
ring t
tinual

are also well-made and of a fairer complexion than any hitherto seen along the coast. The Indians presented them with pearl-oysters in nets of a very fine thread and curiously wrought; and were very desirous of going to the ship: but the water was so rough, that they durst not venture to swim off, nor the Almiranta's people to come ashore, their boat being very small. However ensign Acevedo and another soldier jumped over board, and swam ashore to see the country. When they were landed, the Indians reached to them the nets with the oysters on long poles, for they looked on the Spaniards as so many gods, and therefore did not presume to touch them. The Indians gave them to understand that there was wood and water in the neighbourhood; and that the country was very large and populous with a great many towns: that several things might be purchased here for trading with the inland people, for they seemed to be fishermen, and carried their fish for sale to the towns in the neighbourhood.

The Almiranta continued here two days, in hopes of better weather, that some armed men might be sent ashore for taking in water and wood, which they greatly wanted; and, during the whole time, the Indians kept continually on the shore, calling out to the people

on board: but the agitation of the sea not abating, the Almiranta sailed away in quest of some other place, where they might find relief in their present necessity. This was on the last day of July, and, prosecuting their voyage, came to the island of San Roque, about eight or ten leagues from the former bay. In the middle is a high ridge of mountains called de los Siete Infantes, i. e. of the seven children, there being seven different mountains in a chain.

The Capitana and tender prosecuting their voyage from the bay of Balenas, had on the 8th of August sight of a bay which seemed favourable to their wishes; accordingly they sailed up it, and came to an anchor; but some soldiers being sent ashore, in search of wood and water, they found the country every where extremely barren, and therefore returned on board. Being disappointed here, they continued their voyage, and, on the eve of the assumption, came to an island near the land, where the Almiranta had before anchored, and her people ranged the coast. But the Capitana seeing another island, two leagues further, stood towards it, without bringing to at the first, which was called La Assumpcion, and where the admiral arrived on the 5th of August. This island is of a middling size; the

the
sea-g
ber
mult
an h
caugh
whole
partic
An
trans
vice
form
and
Cap
very
made
water,
admir
great
of wat
their
and th
of Au
island,
a drau
We
tana a
Assum
anchor

the soil sandy and gravelly, and covered with sea-gulls. In some creeks are an infinite number of sea-wolves, as large as calves; and multitudes of different kinds of fish, that in an hour's time only with lines, two soldiers caught as many as the boat would carry, all wholesome and palatable. The sardines were particularly large and good. Here father Antonio celebrated mass on the day of the transfiguration of our Saviour. After the service was over, serjeant Miguel de Legar, with some of the soldiers, went in search of water and wood, and facing the island where the Capitana had put in, they found a lake full of very good salt, and near it some pits or wells made in the sand, some of which had fresh water, but that in others was brackish. The admiral, with his council, considering the great distance, and consequently the difficulty, of watering there, it was resolved to continue their course, in quest of the island of Cerros, and the Capitana. Accordingly, on the 9th of August, the Almiranta sailed from this island, father Antonio having previously taken a draught of it.

We have already intimated that the Capitana and tender came in sight of the island of Assumpcion, but instead of coming to an anchor there, stood over to another island two leagues

leagues beyond it, where they came to an anchor on the evening of our lady's assumption, and called it La islar de San Roque. The day following the general ordered ensign Ferez Alarcon to go ashore with some soldiers in search of water; with him went ensign Martin de Aguilar, who, with indefatigable labour found the wells and the salt-pits, which the Almiranta's people had before met with; and to their great joy, they discovered some marks of the Almiranta's people having been there. From these wells they, with great difficulty from the great surge of the sea, supplied themselves with water. Whilst the Spaniards were there, the Indians flocked down to the shore, and interchanged presents with the Spaniards. The Capitana and tender having thus provided themselves with water, salt, and wood, set sail for Cerros, concluding her next trip must have been thither. In the continuance of the voyage, they passed by a very high mountain, at the distance of about twelve leagues from the sea; but without approaching it. Here the Almiranta was detained by a strong N. W. wind for about a week, from weathering a cape formed by this mountain; and in their tacking, they came every time within a stone's throw of this head-land and the continent. No kind of herbage or verdure

dure v
every
which
and fo
perien
mines,
stupen
of silv
the sho
admira
amine i
length
weather
way for
in betw
of La
the 19th
under th
The
with tha
tain as t
harbour
three lea
Here th
and som
they fou
barren.
a kind o
did not

ture was to be seen on this mountain, it being every where veined with a variety of colours, which exhibited a very beautiful appearance, and some of the soldiers, together with an experienced seaman of Peru, who had all seen mines, and worked in them, affirmed that this stupendous mountain consisted entirely of mines of silver and gold: and would the wind and the shore have permitted the boat to land, the admiral would have sent some persons to examine into the truth of this affirmation. At length the violence of the wind abating, they weathered the point, and made the best of their way for the mountain, or isle of Cerros, going in betwixt the terra firma, and the small island of La Natividad de Nuestra Senora, and on the 19th of August came to an anchor close under the island of Cerros.

The Capitana and tender did not meet with that obstruction from the painted mountain as the Almiranta had; but entered a good harbour which they called San Bartholomew, three leagues on this side the island of Cerros. Here the general sent ashore ensign Alarcon and some soldiers in search of water, but they found none, that country being extremely barren. Along the shore they indeed met with a kind of resin, but being of an ill smell, they did not think it worth their while to take any
of

of it with them. According to their account, it should seem to be amber; but whatever it be there is enough to load a ship.

The admiral was for surveying this port, but night coming on, it was not thought safe; and as no water was to be found, the general gave orders for continuing their course, accordingly they left it the night of the 24th of August. Soon after they passed by the island de la Natividad without seeing it, and the next day found themselves near the island of Cerros; but mistaking it for the main land, they were for coasting along it. It however pleased him whom the winds and waters obey, that in above nine days they were not able to double a point called Cabo de San Augustin. At length, tired with continual tacking, the general determined to run close in under the land, where, he judged, he should be sheltered from the N. W. gale, and there come to an anchor, sending the tender, with the cosmographer, Geronimo Martin, to take a draught of the country, and make a report. Thus, on the last day of August, he came to an anchor in the south part of the island of Cerros.

We have already mentioned the Almiranta's coming to an anchor close under the island of Cerros, on the 19th of August. The next morning, which was the anniversary of St. Bernard,

Berna
tonio,
went
in the
the p
an em
with fl
near th
lately
path,
ral wel
be use
lowed
nence,
island.
path w
they ca
gustin,
had ne
saw no
determi
they dic
the wat
spending
the adm
that the
island, in
ly, on th
with tha

Bernard, admiral Toribeo Gomez, father Antonio, and captain Peguero, with some soldiers, went ashore, in search of water and wood; and in their search came to a narrow path, full of the prints of mens feet; and following it up an eminence, they came to a spot overgrown with flags of a very bright green colour; and near them some traces of a rivulet which had lately run that way; and still following the path, along a rugged valley, they found several wells of a brackish water, but such as might be used in case of necessity. They still followed the path which now led up a steep eminence, till they came to the highest part of the island. But desirous of knowing whither the path would lead them, they followed it till they came to the sea-side, near cape San Augustin, which we before observed the Capitana had never been able to weather, and as they saw no signs of water in any other part, they determined to dig wells near the others, which they did with inexpressible labour, and carried the water in casks above half a league. After spending twelve days in this laborious work, the admiral and his council were of opinion, that the best way would be to sail round the island, in search of the Capitana. Accordingly, on the 31st of August, they got under sail with that intent, standing to the southward, but

but they had scarce sailed a league before one of the men discovered a ship at anchor, close under the island; and soon after the whole ship's company perceived that the seamen were furling their sails, as if she had just let go her anchor. No event ever gave them more pleasure, for they were convinced it was the Capitana: and at the same time father Thomas de Aquino, who was on board the Capitana, discovered the Almiranta standing towards them, which spread a general joy through the whole ship's company. Nor is it possible to express the congratulations on board both ships, when they came near each other. The Almiranta's company being asked in the general's name what part they were in, answered, that it was the island of Cerros, that they had been waiting for them above twelve days, and that they had just returned from a cruize in search of them. At this the Capitana's company were astonished, having always taken the island for the main land; but their admiration was still greater, when they turned their thoughts to the methods which providence had been pleased to take for bringing them together. On the Capitana's people declaring their want of wood and water, both ships returned to the place where the Almiranta had before laid at anchor. And the general immediately ordered a tent to be pitched

ed on
their st
the we
had fe
be a wo
ensign
Legar
island,
spring
long se
two lea
of fresh
which th
and the
discover
ingly do
the three

While
and the
the gene
circuit o
twixt the
to the h
father A
mograph
ingly she
vations i
cuit, and
tains, co

VOL.

ed on the shore for religious exercise during their stay; but the general, on going to see the wells, from which the Almiranta's crew had fetched him water, it appeared to him to be a work of such infinite labour, that he sent ensign Juan Francisco, and serjeant Miguel de Legar with twelve soldiers to walk over the island, in order, if possible, to find out some spring or rivulet, nearer the shore. After a long search among breaches, the serjeant, at two leagues distance met with a small stream of fresh water, which ran into the sea; on which the general ordered every thing on board, and the ship to stand in for the watering place, discovered by the soldiers; which was accordingly done, and a kind of a church erected for the three religious to officiate in.

Whilst they were taking in water and wood, and the ship's company refreshing themselves, the general ordered the tender to make the circuit of the island, and look into a bay betwixt the main land and the country adjoining to the harbour of San Bartholome; and that father Antonio de la Ascension, and the cosmographer should go in the tender. Accordingly she got under sail, and from their observations it appeared, that the 30 leagues in circuit, and the summits of the highest mountains, covered with woods of pines and cedars,

had a considerable number of inhabitants, but of implacable dispositions; as instead of answering the peaceable signs made by the Spaniards, they ran to the mountains, and threatened to attack them with their bows and arrows; making signs for them to retire, and not presume to enter their country. The tender afterwards went to take a view of the bay, which appeared like a large arm of the sea; but running to a great length up the country to the eastward. They next surveyed the small island of La Natividad, between which and the main land the Almiranta had passed; but this island is a mere desert producing only a sort of wild fennel.

After executing the general's orders, the tender returned to her former station; and after taking on board water, orders were given for getting under sail. Accordingly, on the 9th of September, the squadron left the island to proceed to that of de Lenizas, steering N. W. towards the main land; and on the 11th made the coast, which on their approach they found to be level and pleasant; and seeing a bay, to which they gave the name of San Hypolito, the ships came to an anchor in it. Here the general ordered some soldiers from the Almiranta and Capitana, under captain Peguero, and ensign Alarcon to go ashore, and

see w
with
return

The
a delig
road, le
They a
palm le
ently fi
with th
called p
of Meck
of a far
proceedi
twixt eig
sail.

Four
Hyppoli
Damian,
while she
defended
from the
The coun
appearanc

In the
dron now
fires; a
great ma
wind, all

see what the country afforded; and to take with them nets, in order to fish at their return.

They found the country very fertile, and of a delightful appearance; and a broad beaten road, leading from the coast to the inland parts. They also met with a large hut, covered with palm leaves, and capable of holding conveniently fifty persons. They also brought a-board with them a great quantity of excellent fish, called pexes reyes, of the size of the white fish of Mechoacati, and have the flavour and taste of a sardin. The general now gave orders for proceeding in the voyage, and accordingly betwixt eight and nine at night; they got under sail.

Four leagues farther to the N. W. of San Hyppolito bay is another called San Cosme, and Damian, which the Almiranta had surveyed, while she was in search of the Capitana. It is defended from the N. W. winds; and not far from the shore, is a famous fresh-water lake. The country also is level, and makes a good appearance.

In the prosecution of the voyage, the squadron now saw all along the coast very large fires; a sufficient indication that there were a great many Indian rancherias. The N. W. wind, all along that coast, is generally attended

with severe weather; and it now blew so violently, that the Squadron was obliged to run close in with the land, under some lofty black mountains, on the top of which were large plains. These they called Mesas de San Cypriano, or St. Cyprian's tables. S. E. of this sierra, or ridge of mountains, were some white cliffs; and on them great numbers of Indians. The general therefore ordered the tender to stand close under the shore, to discover what kind of people they were, and the cosmographer to take a draught of the country, whilst the other ships lay to till her return. But the tender, on her coming under the high land, was becalmed. The following day the ships stood in near the land; but could get no sight of her: and the N. W. wind beginning to blow with great violence, and the sea of course very high, they were obliged to lie to for twenty-four hours; during which the Almiranta was near foundering.

In the morning they continued their voyage, in the best manner possible, but at noon the wind increased, and even blew with greater violence than in the night; and towards evening a thick fog arose, which in these seas is a certain presage of bad weather. The general seeing that the Almiranta would be in great danger, altered his course to discover a
place

place wh
but had
ever, the
a gentle
what the
rived off
near whi
they were
gale at M
the ships
their mai
ther and
pitana an
other.

The re
at this ca
is there co
and the i
leagues E
Enganno
ing two
height.
after part
fog interc

The Ca
possible m
ventured
keeping a
the tender

place where they might come to an anchor; but had not the good fortune to find any. However, the next day the weather became fair with a gentle land breeze, by which they recovered what they had lost during the storm, and arrived off the Mesas, where the land forms a cape, near which the tender had left them. Here they were again overtaken by a most violent gale at N. W. attended with a thick fog, that the ships were obliged to lie to all night under their mainsails; and by the badness of the weather and the darkness of the night, the Capitana and Almiranta again lost sight of each other.

The reason for the usual violence of the wind at this cape called el Enganno is, that the air is there contracted, in passing betwixt the cape and the island Ceniza, which lies about eight leagues E. N. E. from the main land of cape Enganno, which is divided in the middle forming two lofty round mountains of an equal height. It was discovered by the Almiranta, after parting company. But now the thick fog intercepted it from their sight.

The Capitana being again alone, used every possible method for finding them; and even ventured to double cape Enganno; and by keeping as near the shore as possible, they found the tender; but having no sight of the Almi-

ranta, they were under great apprehensions that she was lost during the continuance of the storm; and having on the N. W. of St. Cyprian's tables and cape Enganno found a good harbour, the general ordered the two ships to stand in for it. Accordingly, on the 3d of October, they entered the bay, to which they gave the name of Bahia de San Francisco. In a rancheria they found onions and goats horns. The country is level and fruitful, and by the dung and other indications seems to have a great plenty of cattle and deer. The tender's men also reported, that a little farther they found a small island which they called San Geronymo; and the general ordered some of the sailors to go ashore and take a view of it. Here they saw prodigious flights of birds, the island being almost covered with woods; and the ships plentifully supplied themselves with cod and other fish. A little beyond this island there seemed to be a large bay with a very impetuous current both at the ebb and flood: and the general supposing there might be a large river at the bottom of it, stood in with both ships, in order, if it afforded a good harbour, to wait some days there for the Almiranta, which, if not lost, must pass near the mouth of it. The tender stood in first, sounding all the way; but at the mouth of the creek found
only

only the
did not
the tend
very go
ordered
for wat
a great
canoes
grow in
to the S
friendshi
several w
themselv
thick wo
with the
canoes.
all on bo
to be pite
while the
on board
abundanc
for the la
morning
so fond o
near them
cherias in
ing leave
Spaniards
of little v

only three fathoms water, so that the Capitana did not think it adviseable to venture in; but the tender sailed over the bar, and found a very good harbour. Ensign Alcoran being ordered ashore with twelve soldiers to look out for water and wood, found near the creek a great number of naked Indians, fishing in canoes made of thick and pliable flags which grow in the fresh water. The Indians came up to the Spaniards with the greatest marks of friendship, gave them fish, and shewed them several wells of very good water which they themselves drank of. These wells were in a thick wood of willows and osiers intermixed, with the flags of which the Indians made their canoes. This report was very acceptable to all on board, and the general ordered a tent to be pitched for the religious to say mass; and while they waited for the Almiranta, they took on board wood and water and caught fish in abundance; though they had little occasion for the latter, the Indians bringing them every morning more than they could use; and were so fond of the Spaniards, that they always kept near them. Nor would they go to the rancherias in the neighbourhood, without first asking leave of the general and the religious. The Spaniards returned their courtesy with presents of little value, which the Indians could not

sufficiently admire; and the report spreading through the country, an infinite number of them flocked to the shore: they eat with our people, and pronounced their language as if they had been natives of Spain. Whatever they saw done, they also did, and repeated any words they heard. The women were covered with skins of beasts, behaved very decently, and the greatest part of them had two infants at their breasts.

These Indians carry on a commerce with the people of the inland country; and in return for fish receive mexcalli, or maguey root boiled, and made into an admirable conserve, and purses of network very curiously wrought. Of these particulars the Indians thought they could never give enough to the Spaniards for a few beads and other toys. The Indians also intimated by signs that up the country there were great numbers of people cloathed, who had beards, and that they had also fire arms. Perhaps these were the people attending don Juan de Onnate then on an expedition to New Mexico; for according to the draught of the country and the distance of the meridians, and difference of climates in the maps by father Antonio de la Ascension, the distance from thence to don Juan de Onnate's camp, could not be above

two

two hundred leagues ; but if this be not thought probable, the people mentioned by the Indians, must be a civilized nation living under a regular polity, and the people which the Indians of New Mexico mentioned as residing in those parts.

The Capitana and tender having staid in this bay the time proposed, the general gave orders for putting to sea, in order to look out for the Almiranta ; accordingly she got under sail on the 24th of October ; but as they were standing out of the bay saw the Almiranta, which gave them the greatest joy, not having seen her for twenty eight days, and had now given her over for lost.

We have already related the manner of the Capitana's parting from the Almiranta off cape Enganno, and what happened to the Capitana from their separation, till they both came into the bay of the eleven thousand virgins : it will now be proper to give an account also of the Almiranta from that time to their junction. The Almiranta supposing that the Capitana, as had been settled between them in case of their parting in bad weather, would have continued to seaward, the admiral and his council were of opinion, that they should search for her in the harbours they had passed ; and accordingly returned on the 24th of September, and running

ning along the coast, looked into the bays of San Cosme, Damian, and San Hyppolito, and the island of Cerros, where they supplied themselves with wood and water which they wanted extremely; but not finding the tender, they returned to their former station in order to look for her along the coast, hoping she might have stood beyond the parallel where they separated: and to avoid being again impeded by cape Enganno, they steered E. five days successively, when they found themselves about eight leagues from a large island, which they supposed to be de Paxaros; but though they kept working towards it above two days, the wind baffled all their efforts.

At last, the ship from the violence of the winds and the extraordinary agitation of the sea, made a great deal of water, besides what she shipped in rolling, and it was judged prudent to stand in for the shore, that in case she should founder or sink, the people might save their lives. When they came near the shore, they saw the island of Camiza astern; and on coming into the bay of the eleven thousand virgins, they saw the Capitana and tender sailing out to sea. Now the same scene of joy was revived as at their former meeting; and the general gave orders to continue their course to the first harbour they should find. Accordingly they

passed

passed
which
along t
bay, w
found a
very go
on the sh
Soon af
gale at M
into the
of St. Si
to the b
miranta

The
Peguero
main land
and Alm
Near the
ber of In
rageous,
dug sever
overgrow
watered.
our men
presents,
from fear
they offer
diers; an
way of co

passed near a small island near the main land, which they called San Hilario, and ranging along the coast they came in sight of a large bay, which the general ordered the tender to found and survey: they found it afforded a very good shelter against the N. W. wind and on the shore appeared great numbers of Indians. Soon after they were overtaken with a strong gale at N. W. which obliged them to put back into the said bay; and it being the anniversary of St. Simon and St. Jude, they gave that name to the bay. Here the general ordered the Almiranta to take in wood and water.

The next morning the general sent captain Peguero and ensign Alarcon ashore on the main land with some soldiers in the Capitana's and Almiranta's boats to look out for water. Near the shore they found a considerable number of Indians, who seemed very alert and courageous, but did not molest the Spaniards, who dug several wells in a moist spot of ground overgrown with sedge and flags, and here they watered. But soon after the Indians on seeing our men behaved civilly, and offered them little presents, supposed their complaisance proceeded from fear; and this made them so insolent, that they offered to take some things from the soldiers; and put their bows over their head by way of contempt; they were also for taking one
of

of the boats from the boys who were left to keep her; and when the Spaniards put off, the Indians kept throwing stones at the people in the boats, till a soldier to terrify them fired his piece in the air: but the Indians seeing it did not hurt them; the day following, when captain Peguero came again for water with six soldiers and landed at some distance from those who came with ensign Alarcon, came down to the shore, and encouraged by the smallness of the number, began to behave in the same imperious manner as before, on which three of the soldiers who had their matches lighted, ordered them by signs to keep at a distance; but instead of complying, they attempted to throw their bows over their heads, and actually did so to one of the soldiers. On which the pilot Antonio Florez drew his sabre, and at one stroke cut both bow and string: which so incensed the Indians, that they drew up in form, and began to place their arrows for shooting; but it was thought adviseable to prevent them, and accordingly the soldiers who had their matches ready, were ordered to fire, and the first volley with partridge shot and balls, six of the Indians fell; but their countrymen took them on their backs and carried them to a little eminence in the neighbourhood, and immediately gave notice to their neighbours of what
 had

had hap-
 dred Inc-
 wearing
 came do-
 and arr-
 landed
 them or-
 arquebu-
 stance;
 with a l-
 Spaniard
 their eye
 told our
 dead, an
 they had
 time the
 giving a
 friendship
 people, a
 the gener
 was done

The sq-
 and St. Ju-
 the forme
 large bay
 every sid
 breaking
 appeared
 the west

had happened : about an hour after two hundred Indians painted with different colours and wearing large plumes of feathers on their heads, came down in a regular body with their bows and arrows to attack the Spaniards who had landed with ensign Alarcon, who on seeing them ordered his men to make ready. The arquebuses however kept the Indians at a distance ; and at length they sent an Indian with a little dog as a token of peace ; and the Spaniards went up to them. The Indians kept their eye continually on the arquebuses ; and told our men by signs that four of them were dead, and others were dying by the wounds they had received from them. At the same time they expressed a dislike of their rudeness : giving at the same time, in token of sincere friendship abundance of little presents to our people, and retired. After taking in water, the general gave orders for departing ; which was done on Wednesday the first of November.

The squadron having left the bay of St. Simon and St. Jude, and continuing their voyage under the former difficulties, they came before a very large bay inclosed within lofty mountains on every side except the entrance : and by the breaking of the sea near the harbour, it appeared that it was the mouth of a river. In the west part of the bay are two islands, which



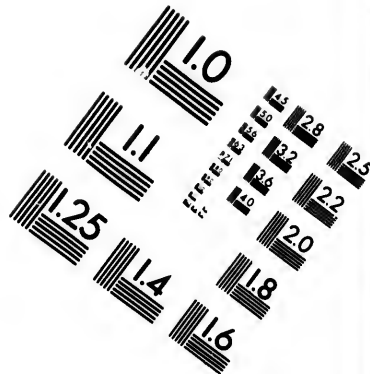
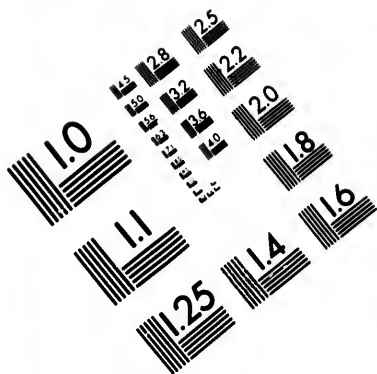
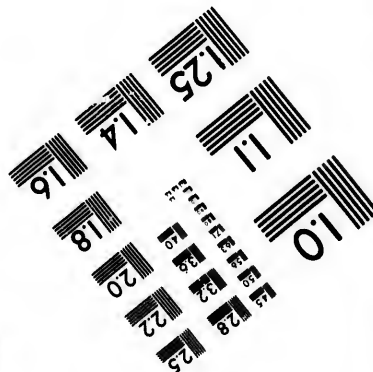
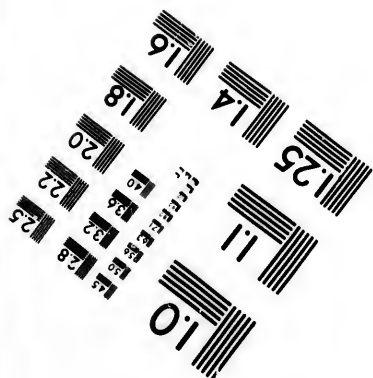
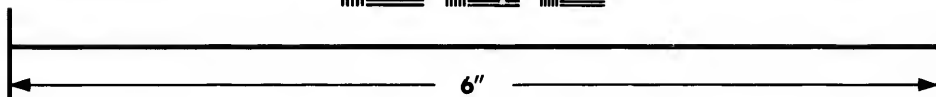
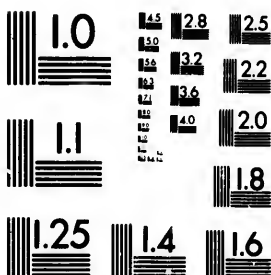


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503



which they called Todos Santos. The tender being ordered in, the Almiranta followed her; but the Capitana, as night was coming on, stood off to sea; and the others that they might not be separated from her, also put back: this happened on the 5th of November, and the next morning it was agreed to stand again into the bay and take a plainer view of it: but a favourable breeze springing up, and the general thinking it most adviseable to take advantage of it, and defer the survey of the bay till their return, they continued their course. After sailing a few leagues, the wind again shifted to the N. W. but they kept coasting along the shore, and were amused with the smokes and fires made by the Indians all along the strand, as an invitation to the ships to send their people ashore. At the distance of six leagues from the main land, they fell in with four islands, to which they gave the name of los Coronados; the two smaller appeared like sugar loaves, the other something larger. To the north of these islands on the main land, is a famous harbour called San Diego; which the squadron entered at seven in the evening, on the 10th of December; and the day following the general ordered several persons to survey a forest lying on the N. W. side of the bay. This expedition was undertaken by ensign

Alarcon,

Abarcon
la Ascer
they four
some shr
variety o
high gro
harbour
and well
the harb
three leag
in breadt
is another
this repor
be pitched
ships shou
ple in the
and keepin
a little ill
trenches, i
was fresh
day a cent
that he fav
along the
with black
bows and a
father Ant
was attend
six soldiers
having mad

Abarcon, captain Peguero, father Antonio de la Ascension, and eight soldiers. In this forest they found tall and strait oaks, and other trees; some shrubs resembling rosemary, and a great variety of fragrant and wholesome plants: the high grounds commanded a view of the whole harbour which appeared spacious, convenient, and well sheltered. The forest borders on the harbour towards the N. W. and is about three leagues in length, and a half a league in breadth. And to the N. W. of this wood is another good harbour. On their return with this report to the general, he ordered a tent to be pitched for religious worship: and that the ships should be cleaned and tallowed, the people in the mean time being employed in wooding and keeping guard. They had their water from a little island of sand, where they dug deep trenches, in which, during the flood the water was fresh and good; but on the ebb salt. One day a centinel posted in the wood, gave notice that he saw a great number of Indians coming along the shore, naked, and their skins daubed with black and white colours, and armed with bows and arrows. On this the general desired father Antonio to go and offer them peace: He was attended by ensign Juan Francisco and six soldiers. On coming up to the Indians, having made signs of peace with a bit of white linen;

linen, and throwing the earth up with their hands, the savages immediately delivered their bows and arrows to the soldiers. Father Antonio embraced them, gave them bread and necklaces, with which they were greatly pleased; but on coming to the general's quarters, the Indians, at the sight of such a number of people, drew back to a little eminence; from whence they sent two women, who approaching the general's tent, with a timid air, the religious and others made them presents of beads, biscuits, and strings of bugles, and thus dismissed them to give their countrymen an account of the usage they had met with from the strangers. Their report was doubtless very favourable; for soon after they all came with them to see the Spaniards. Most of them were painted or besmeared with black and white; and their heads loaded with feathers. The general and others received them with extreme courtesy; distributed among them several things and a great deal of fish which had been caught with the net in their presence. The kind of paint they used looked like a mixture of silver and blue colour: and on asking them by signs what it was, they gave them a piece of metallic ore, from whence they made it: and signified by signs that a certain people up the country who had beards and were clothed like the Spaniards,

ards, m
resembli
and som
in which
that the
and custo
with ther
ported w
and every
bringing
beasts; as
which the

In this
oysters, m
some of
geese, du
were also
and father
the countr
walked a c
were high
climate an

Every th
the genera
the 20th o
diers were
sons had
harbour.
than they
a strong

VOL. II

ards, made from this mineral very fine ribbons; resembling the laces on the soldiers buff-coats: and some like that on a purple velvet doublet, in which the general was then dressed; adding that these men, by their dress, complexions, and customs seemed to be of the same country with themselves. The Indians were quite transported with the good treatment shewn them, and every third day came for bisket and fish: bringing with them skins of several kinds of beasts, as fables, wild cats, and the nets with which they catch them.

In this harbour is a great variety of fish, as oysters, muscles, lobsters, soles, &c. and in some of the rocks up the country were found geese, ducks, and quails; rabbits and hares were also here in great numbers. The general and father Antonio being desirous of viewing the country, took with them some soldiers, and walked a considerable distance from the coast, and were highly delighted with the mildness of the climate and goodness of the soil.

Every thing being completed according to the general's orders, they left this place on the 20th of November, but many of the soldiers were sickly, and some very valuable persons had died while they continued in this harbour. They had no sooner left San Diego, than they met with their common difficulty, a strong N. W. wind. The ships, however,

came in sight of a bay, where the neighbouring country made a pleasant appearance. On every side of it they also saw the smoke of large fires which the Indians had kindled, that the ships might put in there. But on approaching the coast, found no shelter for the N. W. wind; they therefore continued their course, and a few leagues further discovered in St. Catherine bay, a large island about twelve leagues from the land, and from the day of its discovery, they called it the island of St. Catherine. On the 28th of November the ships came close in with it, and from thence had sight of a much larger lying off St. Catherine. They however thought proper not to survey it till their return. At their approaching the island of St. Catharine, the inhabitants made fires in all parts: and when they saw the ships near the strand, the women, children, and old men, began to shout, and with great rejoicings came down from some heights to the shore. The general ordered the admiral Toribio Gomez to go ashore with father Antonio de la Ascension, captain Peguero, and ensign Alarcon, and twenty four soldiers, to know what the people wanted, and take a view of the island. The men with the admiral were no sooner landed, than they were met by great numbers of Indians of both sexes, who behaved with

with the
indicate
had seen
they bro
like a b
they we
distance,
savins an
run. T
general,
the fath
in, fath
came asl
this occa
and well
before ha
of planks
odd conf
veniently
three per
go in each
The m
is very in
carry in t
to one of t
fastening
they perce
sea wolf on
strike it v

with that candour and courtesy, as seemed to indicate that this was not the first time they had seen Spaniards. On being asked for water, they brought a vessel made of rushes, and shaped like a bottle. The water was very good; but they were obliged to fetch it a considerable distance; from a little spring surrounded with savins and briars, with which this island is overrun. This report having been made to the general, he ordered a tent to be pitched for the fathers Andrew and Antonio to say mass in, father Thomas being ill; and all the people came ashore to assist at divine worship. On this occasion also, a great many Indians, robust and well made, came to the tent, who the day before had been fishing in a kind of vessel made of planks well put together, but of a very odd construction. Some of these vessels conveniently hold twenty men, though generally three persons only, namely two men and a boy go in each.

The manner of fishing among the Indians is very ingenious, easy, and pleasant. They carry in their boats long and thin poles, and to one of these fix a harpoon made of fish bones, fastening to the harpoon a long rope. When they perceive at the bottom near the rocks a sea wolf or any other fish worth catching, they strike it with the harpoon; then vere out the

rope, till the fish being spent, they draw it ashore if large; and if small into the boat. Thus they catch as many fish as they please. The sea wolves serve them both for food and cloathing. The Indian women are well shaped, have fine eyes, and beautiful features; they have a decent behaviour and real modesty: both boys and girls have a fine mixture of white and red, and are generally very good natured. These Indians live in large huts, and their utensils are in general made of rushes, so closely wrought as to hold water. The island abounds with roots like small potatoes, and the Indians drive on a great trade by carrying them for sale to the continent. This island like most of those adjacent is very populous; and the inhabitants live together in rancherias. Here was also a temple for sacrifices. It was a large inclosure entirely level; and near the altar an ample circle surrounded with the feathers of different kinds of birds, possibly of such as had been sacrificed to the idols. Within the circle was a figure painted with a variety of colours, and resembling the image by which the Indians of New Spain represent the devil: in its hand it held the figures of the sun and the moon. It happened that when the soldiers went to see this temple, there was within the circle two crowns of a very uncommon size: and at the

approach
but all
the soldiers
shot the
came within
most violent
horror,
good had
specially far
partridge
The people
ticularly
cimons of
ards.

After the
island, the
December
near it; and
Beyond St
islands, five
other. So
populous,
other and
islands take
leagues; and
direction as
largeness, and
lippine ship
mistake the

approach of the Spaniards they flew away : but alighted on a neighbouring rock, and the soldiers seeing them so remarkably large, shot them both ; at which an Indian, who came with the Spaniards as a guide made the most vehement lamentations, and expressed great horror, at the action. This island has several good harbours, abundance of fine fish, especially sardines ; and in the country are found partridges and quails, rabbits, hares, and deer. The people themselves are very ingenious, particularly in pilfering and concealing, some specimens of which artifice they gave the Spaniards.

After taking a survey of several parts of this island, the Squadron left it on the 25th of December, in order to take a view of others near it ; and then to stand in for the main land. Beyond St. Catherines there is a regular row of islands, five or six leagues distant from each other. Some are larger than others, but all populous, and the inhabitants trade with each other and with those of the continent. These islands take up near a space of one hundred leagues ; and follow each other in the same direction as the main land : and their number, largeness, and proximity often occasion the Philippine ships in their return to New Spain, to mistake them for the continent, and thus to keep

at a distance from them. They are however very populous, and have a safe passage betwixt them and the main land, in some parts twelve, in others ten, and the narrowest eight leagues broad, called el Canal de Santa Barbara, and lies east and west. The ships being arrived near the continent, at the mouth of this channel, a boat came off with four oars, bringing an Indian, who was the lord of the coast. The canoe made for the Capitana, and with surprising celerity rowed three times round the ship, whilst all who were in it joined in a chorus as the Indians in New Spain sing *Almatote*. And afterwards without the least apprehension came along side; and the Indian king, or cacique of the country, entered the ship. He first took two or three turns round the quarter deck, singing in the same manner as before; and then addressed himself in his own language to the governor and others. When he had finished his speech he gave them to understand by signs, that the people of the island of St. Catherine had sent him notice by canoes four different ways, that ships had been upon their coast, and that the men belonging to them had beards and were cloathed; adding that they were also very brave, generous, and friendly, and had made many presents to those who came to see them. This report

he

he info
on boar
afforde
near the
with ev
woman
general
nor did
was mo
shore wi
every ma
all the S
that this
sing mor
one of
would fo
he had p
and his fo
soldier re
thought
morning,
the ship
missed th
went awa
Spaniards
preparatio
guests.
gone, a
only gale

he informed them had induced him to come on board to offer them his country and all it afforded, requesting that the ships might come near the land, where he would furnish them with every thing they wanted. And seeing no woman in the ship, he asked for them; but the general answered that they never carried women, nor did they want any. At this the Indian was more urgent with the general to come ashore with his people, promising to give to every man in the ship ten women; which made all the Spaniards smile. The Indian supposing that this was sarcastically intended as promising more than he could perform, said, that if one of the soldiers would go on shore, he would soon be convinced of the truth of what he had promised, and in the mean time, he and his son would remain as hostages, till the soldier returned: but night coming on, it was thought proper to defer the experiment till next morning, when, if the weather would permit, the ship should go in. Accordingly they dismissed the Indian with some presents; and he went away, charmed with the liberality of the Spaniards, and determined to make the best preparations for the entertainment of his new guests. Within an hour after the Indian was gone, a S. E. wind sprung up, and was the only gale from that quarter they had felt during

their voyage. And it being directly fair, the general thought proper to defer his visit to the Indian, till his return. Accordingly they set all their sails, and as the gale lasted from seven in the evening on the 3d of December, till eight the day following, the ships had nearly reached the last cluster of islands in the channel, which are six in number, and at two leagues distance from each other. The channel is about twenty four leagues in length, and the coast of the continent very pleasantly interspersed with woods, and a great number of Indian villages.

In the following night, the wind shifted to the N. W. which caused a great consternation, it being dark, and the ships among islands and in a channel where the sea ran very high. This gale lasted all that night and the two following days; on the third it abated; but they lost sight of the tender among the islands. This fair weather enabled the ships to get out of this Archipelago; and standing in for the continent to take a draught of the coast, they found it extremely high and mountainous, but with some well-sheltered bays, from one of which four rush canoes, each containing two naked Indians, rowed directly for the ships, and coming aboard, very liberally distributed the fish they had, especially salted sardines and other
smaller

smaller
Indians
derstood
their th
made,
seen, an
they can
some pr
parted e
appeare
addicted
other In
like tha
ing tha
try, offe
is their
ceived p
and bug
island,
came up
Indians
fish and
tender,
nearer th
bour, th
Here th
till the
clearing
very hig

smaller fish which they brought for bait. These Indians, as if sensible that they could not be understood, did not speak a word, but expressed their thoughts by signs. They are taller, better made, and more robust than any they had yet seen, and covered themselves with goat skins when they came on board. The Spaniards gave them some provisions and cloaths, so that they departed extremely well satisfied. These Indians appeared to be of good dispositions, not at all addicted to theft or riot. The following day other Indians came aboard, whose visit passed like that of the former. They were very pressing that the ships would come to their country, offering plenty of fish and acorns, which is their common subsistence. These also received presents of victuals, cloathing, beads, and bugles; with which they returned to their island, very well pleased. Here the tender came up with the ships, and related, that the Indians of those islands had presented them with fish and acorns. On the coming up of the tender, the general ordered the ships to stand nearer the shore, to see if there was any harbour, the coast being hid by a thick fog. Here they had a favourable gale which lasted till the 14th of December; and the weather clearing up, the ships found themselves near a very high and white ridge of mountains; but
reddish

reddish towards the skirts, and covered with woods. This they call Sierra de Santa Lucia; it is the usual land mark for the China ships. Four leagues farther a river falls into the sea among rocks, after a precipitate course from some high and white mountains; the banks of it are covered with black and white poplars, willows, and other trees and shrubs known in Spain. This river is called del Carmelo. Two leagues farther is a noble harbour, there being betwixt it and the said river a wood of pine trees two leagues in breadth, and at the entrance of the harbour the land forms a cape called Punta de Pinos. Here on the 16th of December the squadron came to an anchor, in order to transmit accounts of its proceedings to New Spain.

We have already observed, that on the 16th of December the squadron put into this port which was called Monte-rey, in honour of the count de Monte-rey, viceroy of New Spain; by whom they had been sent on this discovery, pursuant to his majesty's orders. The next day the general directed preparations to be made, that the fathers Andrew de la Assumpcion and Antonio de la Ascension, might say mass during their stay there. The church was erected under a large oak close to the sea side, and within
twenty

twenty p
plenty of

After
consider
count to
coveries
compani
one was
to do du
his mat
their bed
Capitana
great ma
were very
arrival at
Almirant
under the
and the
that the
Spain wi
ry her t
should b
der; lik
board th
ance for
board th
These
ordered
dispatch

twenty paces of it were some wells affording plenty of excellent water.

After mass it was moved in the council to consider of the means for transmitting an account to the viceroy of New Spain of their discoveries and proceedings. And as all the ships companies were remarkably sickly, that scarce one was in perfect health, and very few able to do duty; the master of the *Almiranta* and his mate were not able to stir themselves in their beds; and the master and mate of the *Capitana* could hardly stand on the deck, a great many of the soldiers, sailors, and boys were very ill, and sixteen had died before their arrival at this port; it was resolved that the *Almiranta* should be sent as an advice-boat under the admiral *Toribio Gomez de Corvan* and the two pilots *Pasqual* and *Balthazar*; that the sick should be sent in her to New Spain with a number of sailors sufficient to carry her to *Acapulco*; and that the remainder should be turned over to the *Capitana* and tender; likewise that what provisions were on board the *Almiranta*, besides, a plentiful allowance for their voyage, should also be put on board these two ships.

These resolutions being taken, the general ordered them to be executed with the utmost dispatch: and every particular which had been
disco-

discovered, inserted in a chart to be sent with a letter to the viceroy, and a reinforcement requested, in order to make a perfect discovery and survey of the entrance of California; the Capitana and tender being to wait for this reinforcement, till the middle of May following; they also drew up a catalogue of the stores necessary for completing the discovery of the whole coast of California. Accordingly the sick, together with father Thomas de Aquino, were put on board the Almiranta; and every thing being ready for her departure, the seamen were ordered on board; and on the 29th of December the Almiranta sailed out of the harbour. It will not be foreign to the purpose to mention here the sickness which raged among the squadron, being the same, which in these parts generally seizes on those who are coming from China to New Spain, and is so deleterious as to sweep off half the ship's company. In this latitude the air is very sharp and cold, which pierces those of weak constitutions, and perhaps of a pestilential nature; unless we suppose that its great subtilty is sufficient to cause such a disease in bodies attenuated by fatigues. Its first symptom is an universal pain all over the body; which now becomes so tender as not to bear the least touch; and sometimes this will extort tears and cries from the most resolute

lute men
lower p
larger an
tard seed
same col
first unde
dle of t
rendering
semble pe
them in
this symp
so prodigi
one side t
and these
calf of the
and thus
whole bod
ticular mo
the same t
and kidne
pected from
motion is
that they r
not willing
rance of .so
humour n
that it is
the poor p
pressure, e

lute men. After this the body, especially the lower parts, is covered with purple spots, larger and more prominent than grains of mustard seed : the next symptom is wheals of the same colour two fingers broad. They appear first under the hams, and spread from the middle of the thigh to the flexure of the knee, rendering the parts so rigid, that the legs resemble petrifications, it being impossible to move them in the least from that posture in which this symptom seized them. The patients swell so prodigiously, that they cannot be moved from one side to the other without extreme torture : and these blains extend themselves so that the calf of the leg and thigh becomes wholly livid ; and thus the morbid humour pervades the whole body, and seizes the shoulders in particular more than any other part, causing at the same time, excruciating pains in the loins and kidneys. Nor is the least ease to be expected from change of place, as the slightest motion is attended with such severe pains, that they must be very fond of life, who would not willingly lay it down on the first appearance of so terrible a distemper. This virulent humour makes such ravages in the body, that it is entirely covered with ulcers ; and the poor patients are unable to bear the least pressure, even the very cloaths laid on them deprives

deprives them of life. Thus they lay groaning and incapable of any relief. For the greatest assistance possible to be given them, if I may be allowed the expression, is not to touch them, nor even the bed cloaths. These effects however melancholy, are not the only produced by this pestilential humour. In many the gums, both of the upper and lower jaw, are pressed both within and without to such a degree, that the teeth cannot touch one another: and withal so loose and bare that they shake with the least motion of the head; and some of the patients spit their teeth out with the saliva. Thus they were unable to receive any food but liquid, as gruel, broth, milk of almonds and the like. This gradually brought on so great a weakness, that they died whilst talking with their friends.

Such was the distemper with which all were afflicted; which removed numbers from this world to the mansions of eternity.

But to return to the harbour of Monte-rey, where the Capitana and tender remained to take in wood and water. This is an excellent harbour and secure against all winds. Near the shore are an infinite number of very large pines, strait and smooth, fit for masts and yards; likewise oaks of a prodigious size proper for building ships. Here likewise are rose-trees, white thorns, firs, willows, and poplars; large
clear

clear
Wild
mon
ed catt
fame fi
shaped
of the p
head as
yard in
their ho
country
and wild
ons, part
cranes an
ther with
a turkey
voyage,
one wing
are great
and othe
many cav
shell-fish
ther of pe
lobsters,
and whale
rancherias
people, an
they have
governme

clear lakes, fine pastures, and arable lands. Wild beasts, particularly bears of an uncommon size are found here, and a species of horned cattle resembling buffaloes, and about the same size; others as large as wolves, and shaped like a stag, with a skin resembling that of the pelican; a long neck, and horns on the head as large as those of a stag, their tail is a yard in length, and half a yard in breadth, and their hoof cloven like that of an ox. The country also abounds in deer, rabbits, hares, and wild cats, bustards, geese, ducks, pigeons, partridges, thrushes, sparrows, goldfinches; cranes and vultures are also found here, together with another kind of bird of the bigness of a turkey; and the largest seen during the whole voyage, being seventeen spans from the tip of one wing to that of the other. Along the coast are great numbers of gulls, cormorants, crows, and other sea-fowl. In the rocks are a great many cavities, some like the matrices of a large shell-fish with conques equal to the finest mother of pearl. The sea abounds with oysters, lobsters, crabs, &c. Also huge sea wolves and whales. This harbour is surrounded with rancherias of Indians, a well-looking affable people, and very ready to part with every thing they have. They are also under some form of government. Their arms are bows and arrows.

They

They expressed a great deal of concern when they perceived the Spaniards were going to leave them, which happened on the 3d of Jan. 1603; when the Capitana and tender sailed out of this harbour.

The Capitana and tender had no sooner left the harbour of Monte-rey, than they had a favourable wind, which lasting till twelfth day, carried them beyond port St. Francisco. But the day after, which was the 7th of January, the wind shifted to the N. W. but blowing an easy gale, still made some way; and the tender concluding that there was no necessity for standing in for the shore continued her voyage; and the Capitana thinking that they went in company did not shew any light; by which means in the morning they had no sight of each other, and the general in the Capitana returned to port St. Francisco to wait for the tender, which he supposed was making all the sail possible after him; but the first account they had of the tender, was not till after the Capitana's return from the voyage: Another reason which induced the Capitana to put into Puerto Francisco was to take a survey of it, and see if any thing was to be found of the San Augustin, which in the year 1595, had by order of his majesty and the viceroy, been sent from the Philippines by the governor to survey the coast of California;

under

under t
mennon
driven
of the
San Aug
nos, wh
He was
firmed t
of wax a
neral wa
if there r
cargo. T
a point o
but no p
might be
cordingly
sailed out
W. and bl
moved ver
12th of Ja
tains: an
N. W. diff
sea, and n
whence the
cape Mend
41 deg. 30
The day
nuary, the
accompa
Vol. II.

under the direction of Sebastian Rodríguez Cermennon a pilot of known abilities; but was driven ashore in this harbour by the violence of the wind. Among others on board the San Augustine, was the pilot Francisco Volanos, who was also chief pilot of this squadron. He was acquainted with the country, and affirmed that they had left ashore a great quantity of wax and several chests of silk; and the general was desirous of putting in here to see if there remained any vestiges of the ship and cargo. The Capitana came to an anchor behind a point of land called La Punta de los Reys: but no people were sent ashore, that the ship might be in readiness for the tender: and accordingly on the day following the Capitana sailed out in quest of her. The wind was N. W. and blew so easy a gale, that the Capitana moved very slowly. However on Sunday the 12th of January she made some high red mountains: and fourteen leagues further to the N. W. distinguished a cape running into the sea, and near it some snowy mountains, from whence the pilots on board judged it to be cape Mendozino, which lay in the latitude of 41 deg. 30 min.

The day following, namely the 13th of January, they had a very violent gale at S. W. accompanied with fleet; and such a high sea,

that they apprehended the ships would founder ; to avoid this danger, as likewise a higher latitude, where both the storm and the cold would be increased, it being the depth of winter in those parts, it was thought proper to lay to till the wind would admit of their returning towards Acapulco.

At the arrival of the Capitana in these parts she had not above six persons able to keep the deck : soldiers, seamen, and boys were all down with that terrible distemper we have described ; the religious and supernumerary captains were also ill, so that the father commissary could hardly confess them ; or administer the extreme unction to those who were dying : besides as the healthy men were too few to work such a ship, their calamity was aggravated by a violent consternation at their danger, being near a terrible coast and without assistance : and had a storm come on, they must infallibly have been lost for want of hands to manage the sails. The general in this exigency called his usual council, where, after deliberating on the best measures possible to be taken, it was resolved not to proceed further ; but on the first weather to return and make for the harbour de la Paz in California, and there wait for the succours which the Almiranta had been sent to ask of the viceroy. This resolution raised the spirits of the people,

people,
some da
to a hig
said mon
found by
near cape
ried the s
fun was so
mixed w
wind bein
19th of
to the N.
pilots wer
and found
On the c
tending to
and from
eve of St.
San Sebast
ly to assist
treme fatig
ship put b
Acapulco
and likewi

The tend
lost the Ca
fore, follo
latitude of
brought he

people, as they now thought they should live some days longer than if they had proceeded to a higher latitude: and on the 14th of the said month the weather cleared up, and they found by a good observation, that they were near cape Mendozino, the currents having carried the ship thither in two days only. But the sun was soon after obscured by a thick fog intermixed with a cold mizzling rain: and the wind being still S. E. the ship lay to till the 19th of January, when the wind came about to the N. W. which dissipated the fog, and the pilots were able to make another observation, and found themselves in the latitude of 42 deg. On the coast they perceived a white cape extending to high mountains covered with snow; and from its colour and being first seen on the eve of St. Sebastian was called Cabo Blanco de San Sebastian. This wind animated the sickly to assist the healthy seamen, so that with extreme fatigue the yards were hoisted, and the ship put before the wind in order to return to Acapulco along shore in quest of the tender, and likewise for taking a draught of the coast.

The tender, as I have above observed, had lost the Capitana, and thinking her to be before, followed in search of her: and in the latitude of 41 degrees, the south east wind brought her to the Capitana, but the ship not

being able to live in the sea, ran before the wind near the shore, and came to an anchor under a huge rock near cape Mendozino: and when the wind abated, continued her voyage along shore. On the 19th of January, Florez the pilot who was in the tender found himself in the latitude of 43 degrees, and the land forming a cape called Cabo Blanco where the coast begins to stretch towards the N. W. and near it a very large river having its banks covered with ash trees, willows, and other Spanish trees. This pleasing appearance rendered them desirous of putting into it, but the currents hindered them *. And soon after ensign Martin de Aquilar commander of the tender, and the pilot Florez finding they were in a latitude beyond that mentioned in the viceroy's instructions, that there was no appearance of the Capitana, and that the crew were very sickly, agreed to return to Acapulco.

This river is supposed to be that which runs up to a large city discovered by a Dutch ship, and that it is the streight of Anian, through which the ship passed from the north sea into the south. The city de Quivira is doubtless in these parts; and to this country the narra-

* It is worth observing that what these Spaniards saw was not an entrance, streight, or arm of the sea, but a river: that what is added about the streight of Anian, is plainly mere conjecture without any foundation.

tive

tive deliv
induced
discoverie
the fever

We ha
the Capit
to return
whence th
near the
any thing
observatio
the coast
that on th
of fertility
a great nu
being now
the weathe
nual view
shore. W
fully sailin
distance fr
were seen
three men
kind of g
times roun
remony ca
and chearf
houses. B

tive delivered to his majesty, and which first induced him to order an improvement of those discoveries; and a report to be made to him of the several proceedings, relates.

We have already mentioned the departure of the Capitana from cape San Sebastian, in order to return to Acapulco in New Spain, from whence they first sailed: and they kept along so near the land as plainly to discern, whether any thing worth notice had escaped their first observations. In this latitude the country along the coast made a very verdant appearance, and that on the inland parts, which had all the signs of fertility, was also very populous, there being a great number of fires in all parts. The wind being now at northwest, very favourable, and the weather easy, they had a clear and continual view of every inch of ground along the shore. While the Capitana was thus delightfully sailing along a very pleasant coast, a little distance from St. Barbara's channel, two canoes were seen coming towards the ship, each with three men without any other covering than a kind of goats skins: and after rowing three times round the ship, without any further ceremony came on board, with the same freedom and chearfulness as if coming into their own houses. Bisket and some other trifles were

given them and they returned to the shore highly satisfied.

When the Capitana on her return came to this coast, her condition was truly deplorable ; all the people on board, the general and three soldiers excepted, labouring under the above-mentioned distemper, and it was with great pain that the father commissary went about administering the sacrament to the sick. As for father Antonio de la Ascension he was not able to stir ; and the sickness was so excruciating that nothing was heard in the ship but cries and lamentations. Some by way of ease made loud complaints, others lamented their sins with the deepest contrition ; some died talking ; some sleeping ; some eating ; some whilst sitting up in their beds.

The sight of so many fellow-adventurers lying dead, together with the cries, groans, and lamentations of the afflicted, would have moved the most obdurate breast, and providence was pleased to inspire hearts which before were strangers to every humane and tender sentiment, with such fervent benevolence, that those in health attended the sick, and performed all services to them with as much diligence and care, as if every one had only a single patient. The religious, especially father Thomas de Aquino, foreseeing these terrible extremities,

had

had at A
cordials a
for this d
owed the
rality of

The I
shore, th
of San B
large islan
seen to t
proposing
tion of th
the gener
pany not
up the an
apace ; a
perish, t
service, a
The gene
reasons, a
ing to tha
ordered t
from the
the harbo
which ha
cordingly
sing by th
of five on
off from

had at Aquapulco provided themselves with cordials and conserves, which were all reserved for this day of affliction ; and doubtless many owed their recovery to the prudence and liberality of the fathers in the distribution of them.

The Indians were no sooner returned on shore, than the Capitana entered the channel of San Barbara, with an intent of viewing the large island which in their first voyage they had seen to the E. of the island of St. Catherine, proposing to stay there some days in expectation of the tender. But the council dissuaded the general from this intention, the ships company not being able to hand the sails nor get up the anchor ; the people likewise were dying apace ; and if they remained there all would perish, to the great prejudice of his majesty's service, and be a crime against humanity itself. The general immediately acquiesced in these reasons, and without viewing the island or coming to that of St. Catherine, the chief pilot was ordered to steer directly for the island of Cerros : from thence to cape San Lucas, and there in the harbour of La Paz, wait for the succours which had been desired from the viceroy. Accordingly they continued their voyage, passing by the island of St. Catherine at the distance of five or six leagues, when three canoes came off from the island loaded with sea wolves skins

and fish, which the Indians exchanged for bead necklaces, scizars, and knives. When the Spaniards had been there before, they perceived them to be very fond of these skins; and thus, like sagacious traders, had laid up a considerable stock of them, and now came to bring them out to a good market: but being accidentally detected in their address at pilfering, they were ordered to repair to their canoes, and the ship continued her course. Here the wind lull'd, that the ship made but little way along shore; however at length she reached the wells in the bay of Todos los Santos, which, as I have already observed, was omitted in order to be surveyed on their return: but there was a necessity of leaving it this time also, the greatest part of the people who had kept their health as far as the channel of St. Barbara, being ill, so that now there were not above three or four who were able to work the ship: and on this account they stood off from the coast to shorten the passage; and all that was done was to observe the courses steered along this coast, that, with his majesty's approbation the China ships might know what course to steer, after making cape Mendozino, in order to reach New Spain. On the 3d of February the Capitana came in sight of the island of San Hilario. Here the north wind freshened,

freshened
land, a
to distin
by the
said mo
which,
surveyed
wind in
of Cerro
ing, the
former f
water.
salubriou
a little st
ther to g
tering.
and writi
in there,
Capitana
the weath
cape San
being Su
among t
sea, havi
der by
was clear
himself o
and stood
Lucas, o

freshened, that the ships stood farther from the land, and they had only such a sight of it as to distinguish the several parts. After passing by the bay of los Virgines, on the 5th of the said month, they made the island of Cenizas, which, as we have mentioned above, had been surveyed by the Almiranta. Here the N. W. wind increasing, the ships stood in for the island of Cerros, and the day following in the evening, the Capitana came to an anchor at her former station, in order to take in wood and water. And here some of the seamen by the salubrious change of the climate, had recovered a little strength; and they encouraged one another to go ashore and assist in wooding and watering. Before their departure they left signals and writings, that in case the tender should put in there, she might know where to find the Capitana. Every thing being completed and the weather favourable, the ship proceeded for cape San Lucas. On the 9th of the said month, being Sunday morning, the Capitana sailed out among the islands, the bay and arm of the sea, having been before surveyed in the tender by father Anthony: and when the ship was clear of the island, the chief pilot availed himself of the fair wind to shorten the voyage; and stood from the land directly for cape San Lucas, of which he had sight about noon on
Friday

Friday the 14th. Here it was resolved not to put into the bay of San Barnabas, nor touch at the entrance of the gulf of California, but stand directly for the islands of Mazatlan, the inhabitants of them being christians, and there wait while an express could be sent to Mexico, to acquaint the viceroy of their arrival, and desire his excellency's farther commands.

Accordingly the Capitana crossed the mouth of the gulf of California; and on Monday the 17th of February happily entered the harbour of the island of Mazatlan: and the next day came to an anchor in the place which afforded the most secure shelter, and was also very convenient for going ashore.

The Capitana being thus safely anchored at the island of Mazatlan, the general's first care was to send advice of their arrival to the inhabitants of the continent; and determined to go himself in person, together with five of the most healthy soldiers, and to proceed to the village of San Sebastian, about eight leagues up the country. Accordingly, on the 19th early in the morning, the general and his five attendants went ashore; but being ignorant on what side the town lay, there being no road or path, they struck into a wood, and travelled two days in extreme hunger and thirst, which, with the great heat, weakened the soldiers to
such

such a
perishin
they at
followed
carry th
selves u
bells.
round
visions
caravan
ther tha
and the
Sebastia
he offere
resided;
nished t
place th
was at
proved
an intim
known t
general
sired to
calves, a
stay the
diligent
dispatch
acquaint
treme d

such a degree that they were in great danger of perishing in the forest; but wandering about, they at last fell into a broad road which they followed, without knowing whither it would carry them. Whilst they were resting themselves under a tree, they heard the noise of bells. At this they started up and looking round saw a drove of mules going with provisions from Castile to Culiacan. When this caravan came up, they asked the muleteer whither that road led, he answered to Culiacan; and the general enquiring after the town of San Sebastian, and the chief alcaldí of the country, he offered to convey them to the place where he resided; and having relieved their wants, furnished them with mules to carry them to the place the general desired. The chief alcaldí was at a village in the neighbourhood, and proved to be captain Martin Ruiz de Aguirre, an intimate acquaintance of the general's and known to all the military men in the ship. The general related to him their distresses; and desired to be furnished with bread, fowls, kids, calves, and other things for the time they should stay there: likewise to recommend to him a diligent and careful man to go with all possible dispatch to Mexico with letters for the viceroy, acquainting him of their arrival and their extreme distress; the five soldiers with him being
the

the only men belonging to the ship who were in any tolerable state of health. Captain Aguirre with joy complied with every thing that was asked; and without this care in the general and the captain's alacrity, the whole crew must have perished, and the ship been left as a desolate wreck. Immediately seven or eight mules loaded with bread, fowls, kids, calves, plantains, lemons, oranges, &c. were sent to the ship, and the same quantity sent every third day; that the people might not only be plentifully supplied during their stay, but likewise provided with a sufficiency till they came to Acapulco, where they would find an affluence of every thing.

From what has been said, some idea may be formed of the condition of the company of the Capitana at their arrival in this harbour; we shall therefore only add, that by the distemper above described they were helpless and sick, covered with ulcers, and their gums so swelled that they could neither speak nor eat: and the malignity of the distemper such, that none thought of ever being restored to perfect health. Nothing was heard in the ship at her arrival here, but cries and passionate invocations of heaven. However in nineteen days all of them recovered their health and strength; so that when they departed, the sails were loosed,

the

the ship
formed
visited
salutar
&c. se
of a fr
by the
very g
the le
of the
sters, l
ly of
rind o
of a w
than th
taste a
dued v
relieve
after e
closed,
withou
covered
diers g
miffary
seeing
quaint
one an
his tee
of an e

the ship worked, and every part of the duty performed as in the preceding year, when they visited this harbour on their passage. Such salutary effects had the fresh provisions, fruits, &c. sent on board by the general; the eating of a fruit which abounds in these islands, and by the natives called xocohuilztles, was also of very great service. It resembles an apple; the leaves of the tree are exactly like those of the pine apple; and the fruit grows in clusters, like that of the cypress: it is also nearly of the shape of the cypress nut; the rind or shell is yellow; and the pulp like that of a white tuna, with seeds something larger than those of the tuna. It has a very pleasant taste and a tartish sweetness. This fruit is endowed with such virtue, that it cleansed and relieved the gums, fastened the teeth; and, after eating twice of it, the mouth would be closed, so as to eat any other kind of food without pain. The use of this fruit was discovered in the following manner: some soldiers going up the island with the father commissary to a burial, Antonio Luis, the officer, seeing the fruit, from a curiosity of being acquainted with the products of the soil, plucked one and began, though with extreme pain in his teeth and gums, to bite it; and finding it of an exquisite taste he eat the whole; and immediately

mediately voided from his mouth a great quantity of purulent blood. And on putting the other to his mouth, he found that the pain in his teeth was much less, and he could chew it with great ease. On his return to the ship, he related the happy effects of this fruit: and distributed some among his friends, who all found the same pleasing consequences, which induced them to go ashore and gather a great quantity for the relief of others. So that, on the general's return, he found many whom he despaired of seeing again able to eat the fresh provisions continually bringing to them. These were the only means by which, within nineteen days, they perfectly recovered from such a horrible and fatal distemper. This fruit is the chief subsistence of the Indian warriors of the provinces of Acaponeta and Chametla, which lie within the government of New Galicia: but their general way is to roast or boil it, as more wholesome and palatable. The general finding his ship's company thus happily recovered, but being without caulkers, and his ship leaky, he ordered the anchor to be weighed, and sail for Acapulco to refit the ship, and procure additional hands and provisions, that if the viceroy pleased they might return to California; or otherwise put a final period to the perils and distresses of so unpleasant a voyage. According

ingly,
these i
pulco
coming
kept
pulco,
21st o

On
the wh
expect
the pe
cluded
arrived
her, w
certain
have b
ed their
the isla
relate v
ing Pu
Acapu.

The
were a
prevail
proved
bour, o
all the
tion.
Torreb

ingly, on the 9th of March the ship sailed for these islands with a fair wind, steering for Acapulco; and after passing by cape Corientes and coming within sight of Puerto de la Navidad, kept near the shore till they arrived at Acapulco, where they came to an anchor on the 21st of March in the same year 1603.

On the arrival of the Capitana at Acapulco, the whole city was joyfully surprised, no body expecting to see her any more; especially to find the people on board so healthy, having concluded from the account given by those who arrived in the Almiranta, that all belonging to her, who had visited Puerto de Monte-rey had certainly perished: and doubtless this would have been the case, had not the winds favoured their return, and they fortunately put in at the islands of Mazatlan. But it is now time to relate what befell the Almiranta from their leaving Puerto de Monte-rey till their arrival at Acapulco.

The natural distress and toil of the voyage were aggravated by the general sickness which prevailed among the company; and which proved so fatal, that when she came into the harbour, only three persons were in health on board, all the rest being in a very languishing condition. These three persons were the admiral Torrebio Gomez de Corvan, corporal Francisco

cisco Vidal, a Galician, and Juan de Marchina, a soldier; so that had not the admiral been a man of great resolution, spirit, and experience, in sea affairs, the ship could never have reached the harbour. Of those who came sick to Acapulco, only six soldiers recovered. In fine the Almiranta lost twenty five persons. Among these were four of the admiral's servants and three slaves. And hence it was concluded that the Capitana would suffer more than the Almiranta; the greatest part of her people being sick at her departure; and as they were still to go to the height of 42 degrees, they were considered as a forlorn hope, every one never expecting to hear of them any more. And hence that pleasing astonishment at the arrival, and the healthy condition of the crew, of the Capitana.

At the Almiranta's coming into port, notice was immediately sent to the viceroy, who dispatched orders to the officers of the port of Acapulco to take all possible care of the sick, especially of father Thomas de Aquino, who was also to be furnished with every necessary for bringing him to Mexico, and it must be owned that the officers conformed to these orders with the most cordial diligence. The general on his landing procured the chief alcaldí of the town to dispatch a courier to the

the vic
that he
time th
had be
arrived
commā
parting
her as
the cou
ing to t
lar and
returned
reached
died; a
four per
board;
in search
Navidad
where th
ing la N
viceroy,
the four
immedia
der to A
one mon
The vice
sent him
diate an
pay the f

the viceroy with an account of his arrival, and that he waited his farther commands. By the time the courier reached Mexico, the viceroy had been acquainted that the tender also was arrived: for Estevan Lopez the pilot and commander of it had sent advice, that after parting with the Capitana, he went in search of her as high as 43 degrees, and had surveyed the countries already mentioned: that according to the judgment of ensign Martin de Aquilar and the master Antonio Florez, they had returned towards Acapulco; that before they reached San Diego the Ensign and pilot both died; and the command devolved on him, four persons only, besides himself, being left on board; that he steered directly for New Spain in search of the Capitana; and put in at la Navidad, passing by the islands of Mazatlan where the Capitana had anchored. On reaching la Navidad, Lopez set out express to the viceroy, committing the care of the tender to the four surviving soldiers. He was sent back immediately by his excellency to carry the tender to Acapulco, which was performed within one month after his departure from Mexico. The viceroy on receiving the general's letter sent him from Acapulco, returned an immediate answer, directing the king's officers to pay the soldiers all their arrears, and to enter-

tain the religious, who were father Andrez de la Assumcion and father Antonio de la Ascension, and supply them with every thing necessary for their journey to Mexico, in a manner becoming their character: all which was done with the greatest care and diligence. The greatest number of persons who died on board this squadron in the voyage to California, amounted to 48; among which were ensign Juan de Acevedo Texada, a Portuguese; ensign Sebastian Melendez, an Andaluzian; ensign Martin de Aguila, a native of Malaga; Antonio Florez, a native of Aviles, and Balthasar de Armas, both pilots; serjeant Miguel de Legar, a Biscayan; Juan del Castilian Bueno, shipright, born at Seville; and several other brave and valuable men, but of less note.

On the 27th of April the religious, the general, the captains Peguero and Alarcon, and ensign Juan Francisco, together with the soldiers, left Acapulco, and on the 19th arrived safe at Mexico: whence they went in a body to Chapulte Peque to pay their duty to the viceroy, who received them with great joy and affability, complimented them on their safety, praised their conduct and resolution, and promised to take notice of them and preserve them as opportunity offered. Nor was this the effect of complaisance only, his promises were soon

soon pe
being p
to their

This
nified o
Spanish
ferings,
comple
failed in
and triu
to the a
coveries
achieven
fructed
sons beer
the gener
called A
through
passed in
sible to h
visiting N
Spain.
of the wo
tipodes to
ties of Sa
though t
itself mu
what the
covered a

soon performed ; all, to their entire satisfaction, being promoted within a short time according to their respective pretensions.

This voyage in which nothing has been magnified or added is, I think, an evident proof of Spanish fortitude and valour, as under such sufferings, dangers, and fatigues, our countrymen completed an enterprize, which all had before failed in : and if this affords matter for honour and triumph, how much greater glory belongs to the adventurers in this voyage. Their discoveries would have been more extensive, their achievements greater, had not sickness obstructed their plan : for had only fourteen persons been able to have done duty at cape Blanco, the general intended to have entered the streight called Anian, said to be thereabouts ; and through which it is supposed the foreign ship passed into the South sea : and thence if possible to have reached the North sea, and after visiting Newfoundland, to sail directly for Old Spain. This would have been making the tour of the world, cape Mendozino being the Antipodes to old Castile and particularly to the cities of Salamanca, Valadolid, and Burgos ; but though they were disappointed in this, envy itself must own they deserved signal rewards for what they actually performed : they have discovered a new world in which the christian re-

ligion is now planted, and will produce fruits in such abundance as to fill the mansions of heaven: besides the great advantages to the state; articles which our sovereign has so much at heart. We are all children of Christ and all brethren; and thus besides universal benevolence, by the law of brotherly love, it is incumbent on us all to supplicate the God of mercy in whose hands are the hearts of men, that he will have mercy on these our brethren; and send among them able and exemplary labourers for their conversion, that being thus brought to the possession of our holy faith, they may obtain eternal felicity.

A P P E N D I X III.

Account of the voyage of father Fernando Confag, missionary of CALIFORNIA, performed for surveying the eastern coast of CALIFORNIA to its extremity, the river Colorado, by order of father Christoval de Escobar and Llamas provincial of New Spain in the year 1746.

ON the ninth of June 1746, we departed in four canoes from San Carlos, which lies in 28 deg. north lat. the shallowness of the water in this harbour admitting only of canoes,

noes.
three le
pits, b
greatly
watering
within
into the
Gabriel
points a
each oth
we depa
evening
nidad, w
this bay
fords litt
beyond t
the midd
reef of ro
ebb and
This isla
divers ma
water in
though th
the adjac
rocks; fo
At its po
Bernabé,
quented b

noes. The watering places of St. Anne are three leagues from it; being several brackish pits, but the rains washing away the nitre greatly mend the water. The harbour, its watering places, and some hamlets are included within two capes, which advance a great way into the sea: these are Las Virgines, and San Gabriel de la Sarnejas or Sal-si-puedes. Both points are lofty and lie N. E. and S. W. from each other. Having staid till it was flood, we departed about eleven, and towards the evening came into the bay of la Santissima Trinidad, where there is a pearl fishery. Though this bay be large beyond the first cape, it affords little shelter against a S. E. wind; and beyond the other you are exposed to the N. In the middle of it is an island from which a reef of rocks stretches into the sea, and by the ebb and flood are alternately seen and covered. This island has been very fatal to the pearl-divers many of them having perished here. The water in a creek of the bay is brackish; and though the cape where it terminates be S. S. E. the adjacent coast runs N. E. and is full of rocks; some above and others under water. At its point and extremity is the bay of San Bernabé, and opposite to it a low island frequented by sea wolves.

10th, We prosecuted our voyage against the wind; but stormy weather coming on, in the last quarter of the moon, we ran under San Bernabé.

11th, We set sail in the morning with a calm sea for San Juan Baptista, which cape lies N. N. W. of the place we left. This cape is only such in regard of the bay of de S. Bernabé, which lies behind it. But beyond is a continued shore running also N. N. W. It is low, and being clayey, makes a reddish appearance. The whole coast is very bad, and dangerous from the many rocks and stony shelves about it. At three in the morning we were obliged to run in between a reef of rocks, and cape San Juan which lies a little further, where we found some shelter from the hard gales at N. which blew that day and part of the night.

12th, About six in the morning after mass, we proceeded to weather the first cape of San Juan. This point and another form a bay, but of no manner of shelter unless against winds blowing from the shore. The bay beyond it is pretty large, but so far from being landlocked, that any wind makes a terrible sea there. We crossed it in a calm; it terminates at the low cape of San Miguel. This and Punta Gorda form another bay, in which is a pearl fishery; and the sea in a storm throws up great quantities

quant
call th
a cree
native
open
under
wind-b

13th
Pepena
parts,
many
them v

14th
Miguel
shelter.
gravelly
chorage
water:
rock lie
and the

Another
ing a b
rocks,
run wit
streams
beach c
stance o
place in
bottom.

quantities of shells, on which account the divers call this place la Pepena. It has a spring near a creek, but the water thick and brackish. The natives are all christians. The bay is entirely open to all winds, except the N. and N. E. under Gorda point, where we anchored being wind-bound.

13th, In this country of San Miguel de la Pepena, numbers of Indians came from several parts, to whom a sermon was preached, and many children baptized, their fathers bringing them voluntarily.

14th, About six in the morning we left San Miguel bay, after sounding the places fit for shelter. Near Gorda point, opposite to a low gravelly shore, there is at low water good anchorage, in a sandy bottom with four fathom water: but nearer the point, where a broken rock lies on the shore, is six fathom water, and the bottom stone or sand.

Another anchoring place was discovered facing a broken rock: hence are also several other rocks, and the country of a clayey soil over-run with thistles and broom, and watered by streams from the neighbouring heights. The beach consists of small gravel; and at the distance of a musket shot is a good anchoring place in nine fathom at low water, and a sandy bottom. All these stations are sheltered from

the N. and N. E. winds, by the cape which also breaks the violence of the sea. Cape Gorda consists of rocks resembling red marble decorated with yellow and white spots; and is frequented by innumerable flights of birds. The island of Tortuguilla, by the Californians called Serro blanco or the white mountain, lies E. and W. from Gorda point on the other side which is lower; and bears from San Gabriel de las Almajas or Sal-fi-puedes, S. S. E. and N. N. W. These capes form a large bay, half of which is surrounded with mountains; the other part is low and sandy. At the end of those mountains is a spring, situated among the rocks, the water of which the Indians of that place make use of in time of ebb. There is also a rancheria of Indians on the low coast behind the last piece of high land, a small spring of brackish water being found here in a kind of bog. The people on seeing the canoes took us for divers, and fled up the country; the outrages and brutality of those men having rendered them equally dreaded and detested by all the natives of California: but on being acquainted by some of their countrymen, who were with me, that a father was come in the canoes, they immediately returned. The great sea which runs here even in fair weather would not allow us to stay: and it was with great difficulty

difficult
attemp
de Sal
on acc
points
extendi
the sea
or a ca
the cap
shore o
tered fr
on this
which i
two; an
the land
eastward
shells.
dians be
came to
might b
briel, th
which a
four cha
converts
further
like mar
all my c
dles of
keep a g

difficulty we took in a little water. We now attempted to weather the cape of San Gabriel de Sal-si-puedes so greatly dreaded by seamen, on account of those islands, several contiguous points of land, and many ledges of sunken rocks extending a great way from the land. Here the sea is so agitated by the current, that a gale or a calm makes but little difference. Among the capes opposite to a yellow cavern and a shore of white sand, is an anchoring place sheltered from all winds except the E. and a little on this side of it is a creek, at the mouth of which is three fathom at low water : further up two ; and afterwards only half a fathom. On the land or W. side it is deeper than to the eastward : the bottom is composed of sand and shells. Soon after we had anchored, the Indians before mentioned at the watering place, came to me with their children, desiring they might be baptized. Opposite to cape San Gabriel, the famous islands of Sal-si-puedes begin ; which at the middle of the streight formed four channels. As we were departing, two new converts came with advice that the Indians further up the country were coming in a war-like manner, with a resolution to kill me and all my company. They gave me several bundles of arrows for my men, advising me to keep a good look out,

15th,

15th, In the afternoon, by the help of a S. E. wind, we went out of this harbour which terminates in a black cape of rocks, on both sides of which are caverns and a ledge of rocks extended all along the sea, as far as the next bay called San Raphael, where are several funken rocks and capes; but among them many caves for canoes and a tolerable good harbour; a favourable wind assisted us to weather those capes, but I was obliged to leave it in order to take a survey of the bay. It is mostly level and sandy, especially towards the E. side; partly bordered by rocks and high banks of sand; in some parts beach. The three isles near California lying before this bay are, by reason of their distance, no defence to it against the sea. At the close of evening we anchored near a part of the shore sheltered from the S. E. wind.

16th, Though the sea was rough we proceeded to take a survey of the remaining part of the bay. At the mouth of the Cadacaman we saw some Indians to whom we sent word, that they should forbear any hostilities against the divers: their answer was that neither they nor any of the inhabitants of the coasts committed any but the mountaineers only. The N. E. wind hindered us from reaching the watering place of San Raphael: but gave us
an

an opp
hot w
sea the
seen iff
ments
the far
bay.
a leagu
blue.
inhabit
mong
cheerfu
the pr
but we
they w
were g
phael,
there a
canoes,
Not fa
near it
good v
of Indi
seeing
they ha
inform
canoes
a fath
good

an opportunity of discovering several springs of hot water, near some white rocks. At full sea they are covered: but at low water are seen issuing from the sand, behind some fragments of rocks. There are also others along the same beach, at the beginning of a sandy bay. At full sea the water for the space of half a league is tinged with red mixed with a faint blue. Here we met with some Indians, who inhabited the coast, and others who resided among the mountains, and seemed to be of a cheerful, friendly disposition. They offered all the presents their poverty would admit of, but we only accepted of a little fish, and that they were well paid for. On hearing that we were going to the watering place of San Raphael, they accompanied us, and we arrived there at sun set. Here is but little shelter for canoes, so that the safest way is to ground them. Not far from the beach is a large pond, and near it a well, which when cleansed affords good water. Here we found a great number of Indians, who appeared very well pleased at seeing us, and made us presents of fish, though they had the year before killed a diver, being informed by those whom we had met, that the canoes did not belong to those people; but that a father was coming. This assured them of good treatment; and out of curiosity to see him,

him, they all came down together to the shore. But on seeing some of the natives of the other coast whom, from their wan complexion, they call Yaques, they began to whisper to one another, till, no longer able to conceal their aversion, they openly asked their christian countrymen, why the father, as he was coming this way, would have any Yaques with him. I have already intimated that these animosities of the Californians against the Yaques proceeds from the hostilities committed against them, and the depredations their rancherias have suffered from them. . In the diving time they endeavour to drive them from the country: so that it is no more than natural, that savages, whose vindictive temper has not been softened by instruction, should make little scruple of killing a Yaque wherever they meet with him. At our return from the expedition we had a signal proof of the terror which these excesses had impressed on their minds, for many whole families who were come down, being told when night came on to withdraw with their wives and children to a place of safety, shewed some unwillingness; and when I urged them, they answered, that if they went away, the Yaques would come in the night to their dwellings. I bid them not be afraid; for the centinels of the soldiers and natives would hinder any such design;

design
pen, at
At this
first in
from t
who u
which
ing in
17th
with th
them th
to whic
of the l
the inco
decency
water h
away w
however
liged to
tween t
coast of
the shore
ther is a
ninsula,
winds;
beyond
creeks n
rocks th
ficult.

design; and that if such a thing should happen, assistance should immediately be sent them. At this they seemed easy and went away, being first informed that those whom I had with me from the other coast, I had brought as men who understood the management of canoes, which their Californian countrymen, from residing in the mountains, knew nothing of.

17th, I called the Indians together, and talked with them of the injustice of the action, shewed them the foulness of the crime, and the danger to which they exposed themselves by a return of the like violences; and represented to them the inconveniencies of their wild life, and the indecency of their customs. In the mean time water had been taken on board; and we sailed away with a favourable land breeze, which however soon after failed us, and we were obliged to go round the cape by rowing. Between this cape and another formed by the coast of San Antonio northward of the former, the shore forms a semicircular bay. A little farther is a dusky mountain which being a peninsula, has on one side a shelter for the S. E. winds; and on the other from the N. A little beyond the middle of this coast, are two other creeks nearly contiguous, but the many sunken rocks thereabouts make the entrance very difficult. Through these openings you have the prospect

prospect of a fertile country, but the shore being very dangerous, a more accurate view could not be taken. Here two Indians from San Raphael called to us from the top of the rocks, telling us that a little farther there was a bay; and that they were going to inform the inhabitants of our coming. After having rowed the greatest part of the day, we in the night observed an inlet, surrounded with high mountains; but after getting round the cape, we found it had a shore, where at the foot of the mountains canoes might be safe from the E. and S. E. winds. We continued our way for some time in the dark, without well knowing whither we were going, till we had sight of several large fires; and thence concluded that we were not far from the shore, which however we did not reach till midnight. As we were unacquainted with it, and to avoid any hostility from the Indians, among whom it is a stratagem to set fire to their cottages, and lurk in some adjacent place, in order to surprise and fall upon any that come thither, we lay at an anchor till day came on.

18th, The preceding night was very troublesome on account of the continual rowlings of the canoes. In the morning finding ourselves near a stony shore, we weighed anchor and went further into the bay, where three islands

form

form a
from a
and a
one at
dle, v
end ob
landed
which
who ha
gatory,
the dan
from th
stance f
is abou
and the
the lan
craggy.
to pay n
agreeabl
dies, I d
on the s
suted to
country,
is not de
19th,
a sufficie
were gro
more th
were pre

form a basin, where any vessel may lie secure from all winds, with a sufficient depth of water, and a sandy bottom. It has three creeks, one at each extremity, and one in the middle, which is the shallowest; and at the end of it, is the watering place. Here we landed on a very convenient and safe shore, to which we were directed by one of the Indians who had followed us. We called the bay Purgatory, in commemoration of our having amidst the darkness of the night fortunately escaped from the multitude of rocks in it. The distance from the bottom of the bay to the point is about three leagues: not far from this point and the middle of the entrance, is another island, the land of which is remarkably broken and craggy. The inhabitants of the country came to pay me their compliments; and besides some agreeable presents for the comfort of their bodies, I did not dismiss them without discoursing on the salvation of their souls in a manner best suited to their capacities. The neighbouring country, considering it is a part of California, is not despicable.

19th, The canoes which had anchored in a sufficient depth of water, in the morning were grounded; the water having ebbed away more than a fathom. We took in water, and were preparing to sail, when an Indian came as

an

an express that the mountaineers had the night before intended to give us a morning visit : but as all who had been concerned in this purpose were, not come, they referred paying it till they arrived at the watering place : at last we were obliged to put to sea with a contrary wind, which increasing, hindered us from weathering the cape ; and all we could do was to run in shore near the northern extremity of the bay, which, though surrounded with mountains, has a good shore of sand ; but with some rocky spots.

20th, We weathered cape Las Animas, which is every where bordered with rocks above and under water. The two points lie S. W. and N. E. from each other. North of this cape is a low island which, with the rocks that run from it to a great distance into the sea, appears triangular. It is only the haunt of sea wolves and fowls. A little farther are several convenient inlets affording shelter from the S. E. and N. winds, which are most to be feared in this streight. Not far from hence is, also another cape in the form of a trident with reefs of sunken rocks running into the sea near half a league. Here is generally a great agitation of the water. Beyond this cape vessels, at least small craft, may lie secure from the S. E. winds : this is followed by a bay called

De

De L
chain
rity ;
not c
ing.
circum
anchor
extend
a part
of mo
the lan
rock, b
On the
length,
these m
near the
water is
easily ta
ing ship
great qu
an asser
were all
quivers
of the c
us at Lo
us to u
We how
presents
easy, bu
Vol.

De Los Angeles. Along its entrance runs a chain of islands which contribute to its security; their number is so great that we could not count them either in going or returning. Most of them are lofty, but of no great circumference. The bay is large and affords anchorage for all kinds of vessels. The water extends to the foot of an eminence which makes a part of the high and craggy serrania or ridge of mountains: for going directly to the spring the land-mark on the starboard side is a black rock, beyond which are some others white. On the larboard side is a sand a league in length, projecting from the low land. Besides these marks the verdure of the herbs growing near the spring shew the watering-place. The water is good, and being on an eminence may be easily taken on board. It is sufficient for watering ships, but not for the lands, there being no great quantity of it. The Indians here were an assemblage of different rancherias; they were all well armed, very haughty, and had quivers full of arrows contrary to the custom of the country. Besides the precaution given us at Los Animas, their gestures and cries gave us to understand they had no good design. We however endeavoured by all manner of presents and signs of affection to make them easy, but to no purpose, continuing with con-

fused cries and shewing their bows to challenge us to an engagement. This induced us to make preparations against any night assault; their courage never failing to call in the aids of treachery, and they watch the time of the night as the fittest for a surprise. They approach with all the caution and silence imaginable, discharge their arrows, then give a shout and fly. These Indians in their assault on us had divided themselves, some being posted on the N. at a little distance from our camp; others southward and nearer, in order to have us, as it were, between two fires and utterly cut off our retreat. The natives of the bay of Los Angeles, elevated with the murders they had committed on the divers, looked upon themselves as invincible, especially as they were joined by auxiliaries from all the rancherias with whom they were in friendship; so that possibly such a number of them was never before seen together; but by the favour of the Almighty this formidable army was dispersed only by a sally of five soldiers, and thirty christian Indians; who about three in the afternoon marched out against the largest body, who was encamped on the north side. These arrogant cowards at the sight of our men, without standing one fire, fled in the utmost confusion, leaving behind them even their wives

wives
they h
where
shouted
which
examining
finding
had un
them
assuring
them;
to hind
their ch
the few
went a
bring t
and the
turned:
which i
remaini
remarka
agility
next me
the othe
tinued v
we conc
or by
would h
prevent

wives and children; nor did they stop till they had reached the very summit of the rocks, where concluding they were safe, they skipped, shouted, and made many threatening postures which we did not think worth regarding. We examined all their caverns and retreats, but finding only the women and children, which had unnaturally been left behind, we treated them with all possible marks of tenderness, assuring them that no harm should happen to them; but all our promises were not sufficient to hinder them from running away, and leaving their children. These were taken care of with the few women that remained, whilst others went after the fugitives to endeavour to bring them back; but it being now sun-set, and the mountain extremely difficult, they returned: some muskets were fired to terrify them which it did to such a degree that though the remaining part of the mountain above them was remarkably steep, it is incredible with what agility they gained the utmost peak, and the next morning not one of them was to be seen; the other body who lay to the southward continued without making any motion: and tho' we concluded that either of themselves by spies, or by some of the northern fugitives, they would hear of the fate of their confederates, to prevent their attacking us in the night; yet the

centinel at that quarter was ordered to fire from time to time. We enquired of the women left behind what was the reason of such a concourse of people, and they ingenuously confessed they belonged to the rancherias of the north, some of which had failed coming; that the time appointed for the general meeting had been that night; that an Indian, father of some girls then present was the chief of the northern rebels, who fomented a hatred against all those who came in canoes; they added of their own accord, that the design of dividing themselves into two parties was to hem us in on every side, that we might not escape. On their asking for water, we gave them also something to eat, and the children we pleased with sweetmeats, then directed them to go to sleep without any fear, that the centinel would take care of them. One thing raised our admiration, namely, the total nakedness of the girls. The Californians of the Cochimy nation, tho' extremely poor, and have no cloathing, yet decency and modesty have taught them to make a kind of apron of the filaments of sedge strung on threads of miscal, which reach from the belly to the knee; and this, I think, shews a great regard to that virtue which constitutes female excellence; and a woman who is pregnant, in case the child should prove of her

own

own
fort;
practi
hope
foon
faith
such
21
childr
ven
childr
They
argum
least
and th
be per
the wa
pursue
intent
provok
sign of
cessary
great
of the
have k
might
were c
nation
mote t

own sex, provides it with a little apron of this sort; but we saw nothing of that commendable practice in the territory of this bay. Let us hope that by the favour of heaven, it will be soon introduced, and that by the light of the faith they will come to see the turpitude of such nudity.

21st, The Indians were sent away with their children and effects; but leave was hardly given before they, like the former, left their children, and in short, all their effects. They were soon brought back again, and fresh arguments used with them not to be in the least afraid, and to acquaint their husbands and the rest of the people, that they also might be perfectly easy and return to the west, and the watering-place; and that if they had been pursued the day before, it was not with an intent of hurting them, but that as they had provoked the christians by an unbecoming design of falling on them by night, it was necessary to shew them notwithstanding their great numbers, we were not in the least afraid of them: that had we been enemies, we should have killed their wives and children; that they might be assured of a sincere peace; that we were christians, and as such made war on no nation, but endeavoured every where to promote tranquility and benevolence; that these

canoes and the people in them were under the direction of a father who had a great love for the Indians. This discourse made them perfectly easy, so that they took up their children and utensils and retired to their countrymen; afterwards some of our people, having sight of a spy coming from the southern party, ran after him, but he was too nimble for them; however in the pursuit they met with a woman who informed them of another watering-place. The people had all dispersed, and in the place she mentioned we found a great deal of fresh sedge lately cut. In the mean time some of the northern party appeared, possibly moved by the report of their wives, or the sight of their children and effects, which they had left behind, or compelled by thirst, there being no water within a great distance, except at the place where we were encamped. In the evening when the great heats were abated, three soldiers with the Indians who came in the canoes, went to take a view of the coast towards the south: in their way they saw some Indians on a mountain, but our men making towards them, they with an activity seldom seen in Europeans, climbed up the peak. They did not reach the watering-place, as the sun was just setting, but returned to the boats. The land-wind here blew so fresh, that in the morning

morn
was s
that c
and
which
Ange

220
voura
ceede
were
we sa
arrow
We
wheth
find
north
- ong
and to
curre

230
geles,
and
by th
are a
other
ports
must
the c
a cap

morning it tore away the tent in which mass was laid. At night its violence increased, so that one of the canoes broke from her anchor, and was not recovered till near the islands which defend the entrance of the bay of Los Angeles.

22d, We continued our voyage with a favourable wind, which for some hours was succeeded by a hard gale from the land, that we were obliged to make for shore. On the beach we saw several Indians armed with bows and arrows, but on our approach, they fled as usual. We pursued them till late, and not knowing whether we could weather the cape, and there find shelter for our canoes; we ran into the northern elbow of the bay, which is large enough to contain a great number of ships, and terminates in a shallow creek where the current of the ebb is extremely violent.

23d, We got round the point of Los Angeles, which in respect of the other lies N. N. E. and S. S. W. The N. N. E. point is formed by three craggy eminences, at the foot of which are a great many rocks, some sunken and others appearing above water. In it are two ports affording shelter in bad weather; but it must be noted, that opposite an island, above the cordelera of the island of Los Angeles is a cape bordered with a multitude of rocks.

The coast as far as Los Remedios is also rocky and gravelly. The bay of Nuestra Senora de Los Remedios begins at a small island, and near a white shore. In this bay is shelter from the S. E. winds, and some black eminences secure it from the N. Here is a pearl fishery.

24th. Being now wind-bound, some went to take a view of the mountains; but found nothing remarkable. They imagined to have discovered a bay; but it was the coast, which, with regard to the large island del Angel de la Guarda, has the appearance of a bay. This island begins a little beyond cape San Raphael, and terminates a little on this side of San Juan and San Pablo. This island, which is very mountainous, has several bays and capes: its extremity on the S. E. part is narrow, but northwards something broader. The channel betwixt this island and the coast is so full of whales, that it is called Daranal de Balenas. Whilst some were taking a view of the country, we made an experiment of diving for pearls: and the shells near the shore were found better than those in the offing.

25th. We were for sailing out with a land-gale, but the violent squalls with which it was accompanied, deterred us from venturing: at length it ceased: and during the remainder of the day we proceeded, it being sometimes

calm,

calm,
kept a
ous, a
the ca
which
her ru
order
water,
us, an
shouts
them b
with le
when
ashore
they be
the sur
stopped
But suc
ing into
fled. A
shore;
and bei
it, obli
danger.

26th,
large cr
place th
some fr
been les

calm, and sometimes the wind contrary. We kept along the coast which is very mountainous, and the sea so full of sunken rocks, that the canoes often struck against them: that in which I was struck twice, and thereby damaged her rudder. A light canoe was sent before in order to get every thing ready for taking in water. The Indians of the country perceived us, and running to their arms, set up those shouts and outcries which are customary among them before an action. These were intermixed with leaping and ridiculous gesticulation. But when they saw that our people put the canoe ashore and leaped on the beach, well armed, they betook themselves to their usual refuge the summits of the mountains. Here they stopped; and our men called out to them. But such was their fear, that instead of entering into a conference, they turned about and fled. At sun set we came to a level gravelly shore; but unsafe: however the want of water, and being unacquainted with the coast beyond it, obliged us to stay here, though with some danger.

26th, Some people were sent up a pretty large creek, to see if there was any watering place thereabouts: which was conjectured from some fresh palm branches, and flags which had been left there by the Indians; but were certainly

tainly brought from other parts, as our people found neither tree nor flag in all their searches. Others who had followed the tract of the Indians in their flight found a pond at a few leagues distance. In order to find the watering place, the following marks, in coming from the sea, should be observed. The shore is narrow and of a white sand, terminating at a hill of a reddish colour. This place was dedicated to St. John and St. Paul, the day we visited it being the festival of those martyrs.

27th, We departed with a land breeze; and after sailing by some low hills along the coast, we saw on a neighbouring mountain two Indians, who called to us, but we were too far below them to understand what they said. However from their being in an inaccessible place, and their insulting gestures, we supposed they challenged us to an action. Perceiving we took no notice of them, they brandished their bows and arrows with loud acclamations, leaping at the same time with great agility. One especially distinguished himself in these feats of activity, either by way of parade, or as more enraged against us; his motions were surprisngly quick, sometimes dancing, sometimes turning round on one foot, till at last forgetting himself in the conceit of his dexterity, and not attending to the danger of the rocks,

rocks,
precip
he rec
though
his cor
casion
but the
off, and
we op
pearan
being
with a
entirely
ing thi
We too
bay, w
having
rocks,
to an a

28th
squall
one of
seaman
passed
ject a
weathe
some a
a bay,
In the

rocks, his foot slipped and he rolled down the precipice like a stone : but to our astonishment he received no harm, climbing up again ; though not with his usual celerity, and even his companions came to assist him. This occasioned a great deal of diversion to our people, but the Indians were so ashamed, that they made off, and we had no farther sight of them. At noon we opened a bay, which has a deceitful appearance of safety, the only sheltering place being behind the first point : and this is rocky, with a narrow beach, which at spring tides, is entirely under water. The mountains surrounding this bay, have the appearance of rich mines. We took a view of the remaining part of the bay, whilst others went to view the coast ; and having found the whole of it to be full of rocks, and the sun being near setting, we came to an anchor.

28th, We set sail with a land wind, but a squall from between the mountains carried away one of our masts, which in its fall hurt one seaman and was near killing two others. We passed by some rugged eminences, which project a considerable distance into the sea. On weathering a white cape surrounded by rocks ; some above and others under water, we entered a bay, not very spacious and shaped like a G. In the part betwixt a huge rock on the land and

and the cape, is good anchoring ground; and facing the rock a vessel lies sheltered from the S. E. wind. At low water indeed a great many rocks appear above the sea. The other point would afford good shelter from the N. wind, were it not for the rocky bottom and the very extraordinary fall of the ebb. About a quarter of a league from an inlet is a pond; but the water turbid and impalatable. We called the bay St. Peter and St. Paul, for our entering it on the anniversary of those great apostles.

29th, It being calm, we rowed out of the bay; and when we had got round the white-cape, opened another bay running west and south west. It is of a considerable extent; has several islands, and includes the lesser bay of San Luis Gonzaga. On this side of it the shore forms some bays, but shallow; and in one of them we saw a kind of shells, which though of naker, were very beautiful and resembled the shell of the genuine white pearls. We did not take a view of it; referring it till we reached the other side, but the weather did not favour us till our return, when on a survey we found the bay to be capable of receiving any number of shipping. It is separated by a narrow channel from another harbour; and both are secure from all winds and seas. It

has

has several
this cause
bouring
tages it
is too far
country,
To see
ford fre
but to n
After
drove u
another
an island
it appear
in the
twixt tw
bastian,
but beyo
dians inf
palm tre
little ad
other cap
creek, w
wind, b
we found
belongin
30th,
a light r
we infer

has several creeks which abound with fish: and this causes a great resort here of the neighbouring rancherias. But amongst these advantages it wants the greatest: for the water in it is too salt for use. Indeed six leagues up the country, it is perfectly good, but very scarce. To see if such good harbours did not also afford fresh water, we dug wells nine feet deep, but to no purpose.

After three days our extreme want of water, drove us out of the bay to search for it in another place. These harbours are formed by an island of such a length, that from the sea it appears to be main land. Beyond this bay, in the white shore forming a crescent betwixt two black mountains, called San Sebastian, we found a river of brackish water, but beyond in the contiguous serrania the Indians informed us there was better and many palm trees, which we found true; but made little advantage of them. We passed three other capes, and in the evening came to a little creek, where the canoes lay safe from the S. E. wind, but it is full of sunken rocks. Here we found a balza, but no traces of any people belonging to it.

30th, Before break of day came on, we saw a light moving along the shore; from whence we inferred that there was a watering place
in

in the neighbourhood : accordingly some people were sent early in quest of it ; and having found it, returned with an old man bringing an earthen pitcher, which they are very ingenious in making ; a piece of industry unknown to the northern Indians, and also to the christians who lived beyond them in the same direction, till they were taught it by the inhabitants of the other side of the bay. Having this intelligence of the water and a good shore, at eleven o'clock we proceeded with the wind at S. E. but blowing fresh and opposite the current, caused such a sea, as greatly retarded our arrival at the intended port, though at no great distance. Here we found a great number of Indians, from several rancherias ; and whose dialect could hardly be understood. Their deportment had all the signs of fullness and ferocity, and one of them was making ready his bow in order clandestinely to discharge an arrow at me : but I prevented him by taking no notice of his design, and changing my place. We treated them with all possible courtesy, and besides victuals, distributed among them several toys and trifles with which they were highly pleased ; and made us returns in feathers with which they adorn their heads. These they would have us accept of as tokens of their good will : though this was no more than a feint,

for

for the
intention
them i
ment.
we had
wind, t
shore ;
by their
of a spr
hand m
savages.
they sen
understo
added t
prepared
that. thi
norance
date us.
readily
was no
twenty
alacrity
together
stian in
of an In
him, str
they im
up with
christian

for they sufficiently shewed their quarrelsome intentions by licking their arrows, which among them is a kind of preparative for an engagement. We now came down from an eminence we had ascended to enjoy the freshness of the wind, the heat being unsupportable near the shore; when the Indians again challenged us by their leapings and shouts. A christian boy of a sprightly disposition taking a rag in his hand mocked the ridiculous gestures of the savages. This sarcasm provoked them so, that they sent one among them whom we had best understood with a formal challenge, but he added they were many in number and had prepared an ambush. We readily conceived that this information did not proceed from ignorance, but was a studied finesse to intimidate us. The answer was that we would very readily give them satisfaction. The word was no sooner given, than six soldiers and twenty six Indian archers marched out. The alacrity with which they ascended the eminence, together with the courage and agility of a christian in taking away and breaking the arrow of an Indian, who was going to discharge it at him, struck such a terror into the savages, that they immediately retired. But one party came up with some, with whom the soldiers and christian Indians returned except two, who had rashly

rashly continued the pursuit. I had no sooner seen their temerity, than I sent away the people who had remained with me and the canoes. They were soon out of sight and came to a place, where several rancherias had joined together against us; and our two men seeing the danger they had plunged themselves into, one of them called out, with a resolute composure, as if he had a body of men behind him, and pointing several ways with great eagerness said, let some go on that side, others on this; hasten some yonder, and form a circle that we may fall on these savage mountaineers, before they can make their escape. The Indians were drawn up in a line with their weapons in their hands, but struck with what they heard, did not proceed to any act of hostility; whilst they were in this suspense, those who had been sent to assist our two desperadoes came in sight, and the Indians concluding the imaginary assault was now going to be made on them, betook themselves to flight, leaving their wives, children and necessaries: all were taken care of with that punctuality and tenderness which christianity enjoins; particularly in cases where the consequences may be very detrimental or advantageous to its propagation. Several of the men who were taken prisoners being infidels and unacquainted with the christian customs, made

an

an o
a ran
derec
slept.
which
fornia
mong
Jul
vising
coast,
tilities
the w
under
canoe,
the co
yet th
pass o
ing b
still w
the wa
our fu
a safer
coast:
gentile
interce
them
them.
and po
we saw

Vo

an offer of their wives and their necessaries for a ransom. Night coming on a guard was ordered to take care of the prisoners whilst they slept. In this rancheria our men saw a dog, which was the only one seen among the Californians before the father missionaries came among them.

July 1. We released the prisoners, after advising them, that if any canoes came to their coast, they should forbear all insults and hostilities. Two we kept to shew us the way to the watering place. It was late before we got under way, having been obliged to wait for a canoe, which had gone further up, though the coast is very unsafe as being flat and rocky: yet the squalls which fly all round the compass obliged us to run the canoes ashore, having been informed that further on there was still water. The distance of the canoes from the watering place, hindered us from taking in our full quantity, that we might look out for a safer station. Some went ashore to trace the coast: but hearing the shouts of a troop of gentiles on the mountains; and fearing to be intercepted by them, returned, signifying to them by gestures that they would soon be with them. But the Indians renewing their shouts and pointing to the water, fled. In this brook we saw some palm trees which had been carried

away by the floods. The marks for finding this watering place of San Estanislao are a reddish rock near the ferrania; and along the coast some red walls in the low part of the shore: before coming to these walls there is an easy road to the watering place, where having continued till noon we went further, but the wind blowing very hard, and a great surf continually breaking in on the canoes, it was midnight before we could reach the place we had in view.

2d, We entered the bay of la Visitation, in one extremity of which is good shelter though not very large. We here again saw Indians, who upon seeing us, behaved like the rest of their countrymen. But one belonging to San Estanislao shewed us a watering place, situated at a very convenient distance, so that it was thought better to send a canoe back to San Estanislao, to take in water, while one of them which leaked very much was refitting. Here the bay which begins at San Luis Gonzaga terminates. The neighbourhood of San Estanislao and la Visitation affords great quantities of nakre shells. In our return we came here at midnight, and by the many fires which we saw, concluded the place to be well inhabited; and consequently that there was water nearer than that which the Indians had shewn us. On this we endeavoured to speak with some of the natives,

nativ
early
to us
the
nake
cover
parts,
the f
termin
where
side o
point
On the
most o
is a lo
are tw
3d,
damag
ready
4th,
shifted
tion;
and ro
afterno
anchor
shore.
from
beating
when v

natives, that we might enquire about the water : early in the morning several families came down to us, but they gave us the same account as the former. The women here were totally naked, having not so much as the slender covering, used by the sex in the more southern parts, as an indication of their modesty. Here the series of islands which lie within the bay terminates; cape Visitation, bearing from the bay where we anchored, almost due north. On this side of the cape, after passing a low gravelly point of land, is a small cove proper for canoes. On the larboard side lie a great many rocks, and most of them under water; on the starboard side is a low cape. And betwixt these head lands are two other coves or small harbours.

3d, The canoe returned with the water : all damages were repaired, and every thing got ready for sailing.

4th, Made sail with a land wind, which shifted to the S. E. Weathered cape la Visitation; the shore low, and level; the soil clayey, and rocky. We continued our course till the afternoon, when the wind being contrary, we anchored near a bed of shells newly thrown ashore. In the evening we were for removing from our first anchoring place, the canoes beating against the rocks, which were under water when we entered the bay, but dry at low water.

The three canoes by the swiftness of the ebb were grounded, so that we could not effect our design.

5th, We continued our voyage with oars the wind being contrary, and saw a great number of wild goats, and Californian sheep. Several of our people went ashore with a design of bringing off some of these creatures, and meeting with a rancheria of Indians, enquired for a watering place. They pointed to some flats on the shore, which were covered at high water, and then immediately made off. This water is so hot that it emits a smoke and has a sulphureous smell. Those who followed the goats took a view of the shore, and found a deep well of brackish water, whither we came about sun set. Some who walked up the country met with two families, and one of the Indians immediately asked if they were enemies: and on the christians replying that they were friends to them and all mankind, they accompanied them to the canoes, and these were the last Indians with whom we conversed: and even this was with great difficulty, on account of their strange deviation from the Cochime idiom, of which they retain only a few words. This place I am inclined to think is the furthest limits of the pearl beds, having seen none beyond it.

6th

6th
count
lay in
was a
into t
jecting
to run
canoes
branch
a consi
long a
northw
unsafe.
stony
would
turn to
the wa
mentio
the nei
washed
good fo
proach
ligence
cultivat
there w
7th,
prehens
the oth
soon ob

6th, Fifteen men went ashore to view the country and endeavour to find better water. We lay in a bay on the south side, and east of us was a stony point running a considerable distance into the sea. Northward is a sand bank projecting from a low point, and seen at low-water to run above a league into the sea. One of our canoes struck on it: and as it has several branches, we were sometimes obliged to return a considerable distance. The low cape of this long and wide bank with another of rocks northward of it forms a bay, but shallow and unsafe. Having with difficulty got round the stony point, we had notice that the people would continue surveying the country and return to this spot. We put ashore in quest of the watering place which is the brook just mentioned; and almost at the water's edge; the neighbouring parts being in spring tides washed by the sea. Here the canoes had the good fortune to fill all their vessels: at the approach of night our scouts returned with intelligence that the country was barren and uncultivated; adding, that some leagues further there was good water, but little of it.

7th, A canoe being light and under no apprehension of the Indians remained here, but the others put to sea. They were however soon obliged by a very high sea to make for the

shore. The sea continued in the same agitation the whole day and night, so that no provisions could be sent to those who were gone ashore.

8th, We steered to another part better landlocked and called San Fermin, lying betwixt two sand-banks. Three canoes got safely in; but the fourth run aground, and lay till the flood. In the mean time the loading of one was put ashore, she being so leaky that the provisions were very much damaged. The water here is good; but large vessels cannot without great difficulty make use of the watering places beyond la Visitation. This part of San Fermin has two very long sand-banks on the N. and S. that at low water they are dry for two leagues, as we saw at our return.

9th, It being flood we went out at three in the afternoon, but in going over the bar all were obliged to go forward. We next came to the bay of San Phelipe de Jesus; the capes of which lie N. and S. from one another. That of the N. terminates in some black mountains, but being unwilling to lose the opportunity of a fair wind, we continued our course, leaving the survey of it till our return, and then found it to afford shelter against the N. wind, even for large vessels; but it is at a great distance from the shore, which is so lined with sand-banks

bank
water
is a
moon
but a
flat
thick
in its
it res
our
water
and o
from
be m
count
sheep
point
have
S. E.
shelter
not
noes.
cables
a hard
tides,
than a
this p
we sav
the N

banks that there is no landing but at high-water. The shore is sandy, and on the N. side is a creek, which at full and change of the moon has a depth of water sufficient for boats, but at other times is dry. At the foot of a flat eminence it affords plenty of water, but thick, disagreeable, of an ill smell, and noxious in its quality. Its effects on those who drink it resembling the symptoms of the scurvy. At our return we stayed some days near this watering-place, but saw not a single Indian: and our people being sickly and spent coming from the Rio Colorado, no excursions could be made into the country. All along the low country from la Visitation to this harbour are sheep and wild goats: we went round the N. point, which although at full sea, it appears to have several small inlets safe from the S. and S. E. winds; yet in reality has only one little sheltering place running southward, and this not proper for any thing larger than canoes. Indeed at spring tides, and with good cables, a larger vessel may put into it in case of a hard gale at S. and S. E. but not at neap-tides, there being no depth of water nearer than a league and a half from the shore. From this place at the rising and setting of the sun, we saw the land on the other side; and from the N. point of San Phelipe we had sight of

another cape on this side, which appeared to form a large bay, but it was no more than appearance, there being no such bay; the point of the hill lying within the mouth of the river Colorado up the country. From this corner the shore is entirely level, marshy in several parts at spring tides; and in hard weather overflowed. All the way from San Phelipe to the river Colorado there is neither bay nor watering-place.

10th, We made little progress this day, a strong N. E. wind blowing from the shore, which was contrary to us: the points in that part running N. E. and N. N. E. the strait closing here. At noon we got ashore with great difficulty, the water being shallow and a great sea running along this coast, which is extremely barren. The serrania or ridge of mountains is three or four leagues distant from the sea, and in some parts more. At night we came into a better shore, though with a high sea. The bottom here we found to be mixed with mud.

11th, Made but little way, and came to some red marshes, whence we concluded we were near the mouth of the river Colorado or red river. We however continued our course till the evening, having endeavoured to land in several places, but to no purpose, the fens not
only

only
but I
vour
we c
form
form
from
qualit
touch
and w
ful in
the b
the ex
of the
arrived
return

12th
rated
times,
ing, t
mentio
was ve
high :
greater
other t
wet, h
cape t
the fen

only hindering the boats from coming ashore, but likewise would not bear those who endeavoured to cross them. Under this difficulty we came to an anchor facing an island, which forms a creek at the end of the strait in the form of a bow: the water even here differs from that of the sea, being of such a malignant quality as to carry off the skin wherever it touches, and all were wet with it except myself; and were accordingly afflicted with very painful inflammations in the most sensible parts of the body, and which continued till the end of the expedition. In some the first symptoms only of the scurvy appeared; but in others it was arrived at such a height, that during the whole return they were unable to stir.

12th, Had a hard gale at S. which separated the canoes. One endeavoured several times, but without effect, to weather, by tacking, the point of the fen, at which the island mentioned yesterday terminates. This canoe was very near foundering, the sea running very high: another canoe was obliged to throw the greatest part of her lading overboard; but the other two, though the lading and people were wet, had the good fortune after weathering the cape to find a safe shore, being now beyond the fens,

13th,

13th, The canoe which had put ashore on the other coast, after making way the greatest part of the night, betwixt seven and eight in the morning, arrived at San Buenaventura, where the lading was taken out and exposed to the air, and the canoe grounded. Some people from the others came in search of her, but were hindered by a creek.

14th, Whilst the provisions, cloaths, and other things were drying, a party went to take a view of the neighbouring country, and found a great many prints of men and beasts. Those at San Buenaventura used all possible endeavours to find out a watering-place, but with no success, though they were a day and a half about it. The smallest canoe came and joined them in that part, and brought intelligence, that all the people and the canoes were safe in the same outlet of the river Colorado. Some drinkable water was found which issued from the river Colorado.

15 and 16th, The smaller canoe having assisted the other in taking in water : on the 17th they removed to the station where the other was.

18th, Went up the entrance of the river Colorado, and within it lies the before-mentioned island, which is triangular, and divides its stream into two arms ; one in California
running

running northward, and the other of the opposite side running N. W. The people went ashore in the island, and found themselves betwixt two rapid currents. One of the river's ebb, and the other in the sea was flowing in with no less impetuosity, that they had a very narrow escape; but lost only some of their lading. The canoes removed to the coast of California as more secure, where in the night time they saw fires; but in the day time none of the Indians shew'd themselves.

19th, Continued the discovery of the river, but the currents here became so rapid that the canoes could not stem it with rowing, that they were obliged to have recourse to towing by which they made a little way; but as one canoe could not be towed for want of ropes, it altered its course and stood for the other side which was one of the three islands discovered by our people on this occasion. On the 18th day they saw the first, which divides the river into two parts; the second, like the first, lies in the river's bed, and faces it at a little distance: the third lies on the side of the other two; the river dividing itself on the side of this lateral island towards the other shore, forms an arm, but so small that at low-water it is almost dry. This side of California, lying low, is overflowed by the Colorado, that all along to
the

the foot of the mountains one sees pieces of trees, weeds, and the like, left there by its water. Our people also saw here a kind of threshing floors, where the natives thresh a kind of seed like wheat, but as small as anniseed.

20th, The canoes continued grounded, and the flood was attended with such rapidity, and at the same time a very high sea, that the canoe which had parted from the others, was in the greatest danger; and the smallest which was now coming in, immediately made for it, in order to save the people: and it pleased God and his most holy mother that it came in time for that purpose, but the provisions and effects of all on board were lost, and the canoe was burnt to save the iron-work.

21st, The canoes were sent to look out if any thing of the wreck had been thrown ashore, and on the continent they found two casks of water.

22d, The canoes were hindered from going out by the appearance of tempestuous weather. In the mean time the people took a view of the country, and at the distance of five leagues saw Cauzal and Saucedá.

23d and 24th, During these days, though we endeavoured to go forward, the wind and the current obliged us always to put back to the place whence we had come. This was an
elbow

elbow near a great wall running eastward. The canoes were not able to make way. They who had been sent on the survey reported that the river took its course along the ferrania on the side of California.

25th, The survey of the gulph, or sea of California being carried to its utmost limit, we steered not directly to the harbour, from whence we had sailed; but to take a view of some harbours, which, by reason of circumstances, had been omitted in our coming. Fifteen men travelled some way by land, took an exact account of the situation and course of the creek at the point of the fens; and it stands delineated in the map.

First let it be observed, that in this journal we have taken no notice of the latitude, this being exactly set down in the map of this survey.

Secondly, Let the pearl divers be persuaded that if they do not come with a good number of people well armed and be very circumspect, many will lose their lives by the hands of the savages: for tho' after being baptized, they became tractable, sincere, and benevolent; yet whilst unconverted they are designing, haughty, and cruel, and more to strangers than to those of their country with whom they are at variance. Besides being furnished with men and arms,

arms, it is necessary that they forbear exasperating the Indians by any ill treatment, as robbery, bringing away their children, abusing their wives, an injury of all others the most provoking; and by which, besides their natural barbarity, they are inflamed with an implacable hatred against all strangers who set foot on their shore. Those concerned in such understandings should shew themselves christians, and be zealous for the honour of the Spanish nation, on which they have brought an indelible stain by the most scandalous cowardice, particularly the last year at San Raphael, on an occasion which called for valour, when the savages after treacherously murdering a diver, killed another in the very sight of the owners; and they instead of coming to his rescue, fled away with precipitation. This inspires them to make the like attempts on others, and they will perpetrate them if it is their good fortune always to meet with such cowards.

In order to prevent these damages, and open a way to the temporal and spiritual reduction of the country, a design was formed some years since to take an accurate survey of the gulph of California, in order find out convenient places for garrisons, harbours, and missions. This could not be effected till the present year 1746, when

when
neral
vincia
Califo
menti
whom
the op
comp
with
difficu
thing
necessi
being
The i
come
having
the ser
amidst
charge
every
to coa
savages
'numbe
them w
Capt
comm
on this
for reli
majesty

when father Juan Antonio Balthasar, visitor general of the missions, sent me the father provincial's order to take a survey of the gulph of California, specifying the circumstances above-mentioned, in order to lay before his majesty whom God preserve, and his royal council, the opportunities which these coasts afford for completing the conquest. I received the order with due obsequiousness, but the execution was difficult, from the great scarcity here of every thing requisite for such an enterprize, the very necessaries for the subsistence of the missionaries being not acquired without great difficulty. The importance of the service however overcome every other consideration. The missions having at heart this work from their zeal for the service of God and his majesty, contributed amidst all their straits, wherewith to defray the charges of canoes, seamen, provisions, and every other thing necessary in a voyage to coasts unknown, and inhabited only by savages. They likewise added a considerable number of christian Cochimies, and furnished them with arms and cloathing.

Captain don Bernardo Rodrigues de Rea, commandant of the royal garrison of Loretto on this occasion, likewise, shewed his regard for religion, and his care and activity in his majesty's service, exerting himself to provide every

every thing with the utmost dispatch, which was within his department. He procured a good canoe, appointed an escorte of soldiers, which was necessary for my safety, and of those who went with me. And though his post as governor of the garrison would not permit him to head the soldiers himself, he attended us far as San Carlos, the nearest harbour to the frontiers, and the rendezvous of their canoes and soldiers, and where he personally disposed every thing for the voyage, and remained there till our departure. Some days after an account came that the Gentiles had killed all of us, soldiers, seamen, and Indians, not leaving one alive, and had broke the canoes to pieces. It no sooner reach'd the captain's ears than he prepared to go with a body of men in a canoe to the shore to certify himself of the fact, and to see the best remedy that could be applied, whilst measures were taken better adapted for baffling the opposition, to the glory of Christ and the honour of his majesty, which the devil carried on by those under his influence. But the captain was persuaded not to stir till he received a confirmation of this bad news, which from the Indians proneness to lying, and the circumstances that the canoes would be resolutely defended, were supposed, if not entirely, to be partly false.

And

And
fio
cur
nel
unc
tion
jeft
that
adv
happ

A d
W
of
ye

ITi
tr
but w
amine
niards
failing
far as
many
it pru
true,
being
Vo

And as it proved so the captain had no occasion for putting his generous intention in execution. God and his holy mother, the patronness of these missions, grant that these services undertaken purely for their glory, the salvation of souls, and the enlargement of his majesty's dominions, may have the desired issue, that we may see this end obtained; and with advantages which may enhance its glory and happiness.

A P P E N D I X IV.

A description of CALIFORNIA, by captain Woods Rogers, an Englishman, and of his voyage to the South-sea in the year 1710.

IT is not properly ascertained whether this country be an island, or joined to the continent; but we had neither time nor inclination to examine into this particular. I have heard Spaniards say, that some of their countrymen after sailing along the coast of California, and as far as 42 deg. north latitude, met with so many shoals and islands that they thought it prudent not to go any farther. If this be true, there is great appearance of California's being joined to the continent a little farther to

the northward, shoals and islands being a general indication that some continent is near. But the Spaniards being already masters of more lands in this country than they can cultivate, their spirit for new discoveries is abated. The Philippine ships bound to Acapulco, on their arriving in 40 degrees, sail along this coast, but I never heard that any one of them ever stood farther to the northward. In some old maps this country is joined to that of Yesso, and I am not a little inclined to think, that this is really the case, but shall not take upon me absolutely to affirm it; and rather, if we will believe the Dutch, as the Hollanders took in these seas a Spanish ship which had sailed quite round California, and consequently found it to be an island. Nor is there any more certainty with regard to its form and extent, so that the reader must, for these particulars, have recourse to the maps, and from thence judge for himself. With regard to that part of the country, I myself saw, it is full of mountains, barren, with some small trees and bushes, bearing several kinds of berries. The men whom I sent ashore in a boat to survey the coast, walked near fifteen leagues to the northward, where they found great numbers of very large trees; but with regard to the good harbours the Spaniards told us of, we could see nothing

not
dise
from
pret
we t
affor
habir
almo
is ge
of th
parts
to tw
ever,
Du
mild
now a
nigh
the ai
hundr
as pin
the ot
with lo
their v
the wo
formed
the skin
pretty
wrinkle
ed from

nothing of them near this cape. We indeed discerned the smoke of fires in several parts, from whence we concluded the country to be pretty well peopled; though of all the parts we touched at since our leaving England, this affords the least for the subsistence of its inhabitants. At this time of the year there is almost constantly a land breeze, so that there is good anchorage all along the starboard side of the bay as you enter it; but one of the best parts is a bank, on which there are from ten to twenty fathoms water: near the rocks, however, no bottom can be found.

During our stay here the weather was very mild and fair, and very little rain, though now and then hard gales of wind; but in the night very copious dews fell, which rendered the air very cool. We once saw near three hundred of the natives, tall, robust, and stait as pine trees; but more swarthy than any of the other Indians we saw in the South-sea, with long, lank, black hair, reaching down to their waste. They were quite naked, except the women, who wear a kind of petticoat formed of the fibres of a certain herb, or of the skins of animals or fowl. Those we saw were pretty well stricken in years, and extremely wrinkled; the young, I suppose, they concealed from us, as a wise precaution not to tempt

our sailors to use them ill; though I believe they had little reason to fear any attempt would have been on their chastity, our desires being not inflammable by the beauties of California. Their pronunciation is remarkably guttural, their language seemed to resemble their features, and their behaviour appeared to us harsh and disagreeable. I would gladly have taken two of them with me in order to procure an account of their country, that might be relied on; but our provisions being short, I was afraid of increasing our number. Some had bracelets, others necklaces, some both; made of wooden beads, pieces of shells, red berries, and pearls, which I suppose they have not the way of piercing, they being cut all round, and fastened with a pita thread. They are so fond of these ornaments, that they would not accept of any of our toys, or bugle necklaces, though I had them of different colours; but knives, and other cutting instruments, were highly acceptable. I must mention one thing of their honesty, namely, that they never meddled with any thing belonging to us, though our coopers and carpenters generally left their tools ashore.

We could not find that they had any of those necessary utensils brought from Europe. Their cottages are very low, and consist only of
branches

br
tin
the
thi
lea
he
wit
be
the
at
He
the
spea
ous
cell
that
pier
boy
was
dou
beli
dive
old
the
T
blac
fuls
their
of c

branches of trees and reeds, and, at the same time, so badly covered, as not to defend them from the weather. With regard to any thing of a garden, or cultivated land, not the least vestige was to be seen. While we were here, fish was their whole subsistence; and this, with their wretched huts, which seemed only to be built for a time, induced us to believe that they had no fixed dwelling, but removed hither at this season, to provide themselves with fish. Here we saw fishermen without hooks or nets, their only instrument is a kind of wooden spear, with which they are surprizingly dextrous at striking fish, and, at the same time excellent divers. Some of our men told me, that they saw one of these Indians dive, after piercing a fish, and without raising his head above the water gave it to his companion, who was waiting in a canoe. Those that please may doubt of this, but I am the rather inclined to believe it, as I myself have seen some of these divers, who on my throwing over board an old knife, would seize it before it had reached the bottom.

Their bread, if I may call it so, is a small black seed, which they grind and eat by handfuls. Some of our people, who used it to thicken their broth, said it had something of the taste of coffee. They have also a root not very

different from the yam, and a kind of pulse in a pod or shell, and which our people compared to green peas. They have also berries, which, after being dried in the fire, have nearly the same taste as dried kidney beans. Others, which the natives highly value, taste like gooseberries; but the pulp is of an acid sweetness, and in the center is a stone. We likewise saw a few fig trees, the fruit of which tastes like our currants, and makes no disagreeable sauce. Besides these we observed a great variety of plants, but we had no time for botanical curiosity.

By the animals we saw, the Californians seem to have a particular season for hunting. I observed the inhabitants shewed a remarkable respect to one person, whose head was adorned with feathers; but in all other respects, they seem to have every thing in common. At least while they bartered fish with us for old knives, of which we had a plentiful stock, we observed that they would give them to the first of their countrymen, who happened to be near; and when they had got a sufficient number, we were at a loss how to purchase any more fish. Their predominant vice is sloth, caring for nothing but the present time. They would gaze at our people while employed in taking in water and wood, but never offered

to

to assist them. In short they seem of all the people I ever met with to have the greatest aversion to labour and fatigue. Their weapons are the bow and arrow, with which they easily kill a bird flying. Their bows, which are about seven feet in length, are made of a white wood to which we are strangers, and the strings of their bows are of pita. Their arrows are made of reeds, pointed with a fish bone, well sharpened: these are about four feet and a half long. Most of their cutting tools are of the teeth of sea wolves. In some of their necklaces I observed two or three large pearls, and our Spanish prisoners, told me that they found a great many in the gulf of California, where the missionaries are settled; they added, that the internal part of the country, as far as the continent of Mexico is very fertile and pleasant, abounding in horned cattle, and all kinds of provisions: when we were standing off to sea, some of our people told me they had seen stones remarkably heavy, and of a glittering appearance, as if they contained some kind of metal; but their information was given too late, otherwise I should have taken some of them on board for making experiments on them. A few of the natives, who had contracted a familiarity with us, used to come on board our ships, the construction of which filled them

with admiration. They have only balzas or floats, which they guide by paddles. We gave one of them a shirt; but instead of putting it to the use intended, he tore it into several pieces and distributed them among his companions, for holding the grain they use for bread. I think they have no kitchen utensils; at least the method of dressing their fish was no other than to bury it in the sand, and make a fire upon the spot. When it was sufficiently roasted, they took it out, and eat it without any farther ceremony. Their method of procuring fire is by rubbing two dry sticks against each other; the same is used by the other Indians of America; but they constantly keep a fire in their huts. The water here is extremely good. I also saw a great quantity of sea fennel, but no uncommon birds.

The entrance of this harbour coming from the westward, is known by four white rocks, resembling those of the needles in the isle of Wight, and the two on the west side appear like sugar loaves. That nearest the land, has an arch or aperture, like a bridge, under which the water runs. In entering the harbour the rock nearest the sea must be left a cable's length on the larboard side; and as soon as you are past it, stand directly for the bottom of the bay, which is every where safe, and has from ten to twenty five fathom,

fathom water. Here a ship is land-locked from the north east to the south east ; though should a strong southerly wind set in, a ship would have but a very indifferent road ; but this did not happen during my stay.

A P P E N D I X V.

Extract of some passages in the voyage of commodore Anson ; with a vindication of the jesuits.

IN the last war between the crowns of Spain and England, the latter sent in the year 1740, a squadron into the South-sea under the command of commodore Anson ; who having doubled cape Horne, and ranged the coasts of Peru and New Spain, * steered to the Marian islands to wait for the Philippine galleon in her return from Acapulco. He succeeded and found on board four millions of dollars. This rich prize he carried to China, and thence round the cape of Good Hope to Europe. Of this voyage Mr. Richard Walter, who was in the expedition, published an account from the journals and papers of the said commodore. A French translation of this work

* Not till he had pillaged the town of Payta and taken several ships.

was published at Amsterdam in the year 1749.

In this account mention is made of California, on occasion of the commerce to the Philippine islands, and the course thither : and the origin and state of its missions are briefly touched upon. The writer being a protestant nothing is to be expected from his pen, but a satire against the jesuits. Nor has he taken any care to be one of those few who, though protestants never lose sight of candour and modesty in their writings. It was for his interest to please the publick of London, and he was unwilling to lose so favourable an opportunity of gratifying them with such a representation of the jesuits, as he thought would be most acceptable, though at the expence of probity and truth. Walter's imaginary accusation of the jesuits, would not be worth regarding, were it not for the melancholy experience, protestants have published nothing against the society of jesuits however false and groundless, which has not been countenanced and adopted both by the tongues and pens of some catholicks, who delight in venting their insults against it ; whilst the society wholly attentive to fulfil those ends for which its great leader has planted it in his church, never intermeddles with any over whom religion has not given it some charge or superiority. This is the motive for delivering
my

my sentiments on the said account, lest my silence might be construed as a tacit acknowledgement of what Mr. Walter has advanced.

Walter employs the 10th chapter of the 2d book in describing the manner of carrying on the commerce betwixt the city of Manilla the capital of the island of Luzon and Acapulco on the coast of Mexico: and after discanting on the conquests of the Philippines, the claims, contests and compacts of the two crowns of Spain and Portugal, the grant from the pope, Magellan's voyage, the settlements of the Spaniards, the ancient commerce with Calao, and the difficulty of the voyages in a direct course; he relates, that the wrong method of sailing was altered by advice of a jesuit, who persuaded the Spaniards, that in returning from the Philippine islands they should sail away northward before the brizas or trade winds, till they came into the westerly winds which generally prevail in the higher latitudes; and which would in a short time bring them in sight of the coast of California. This opinion was in some measure right; but that it came from a jesuit is grounded only on a flying report, which may have no more truth in it than many others. He adds, that this new method has been practised at least for one hundred and sixty years past, sir Thomas Cavendish having



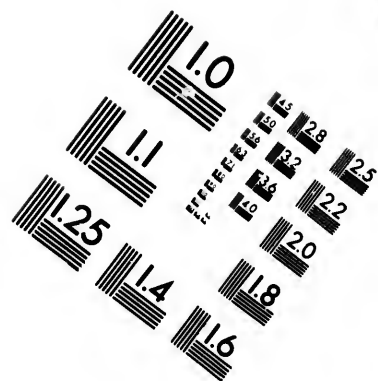
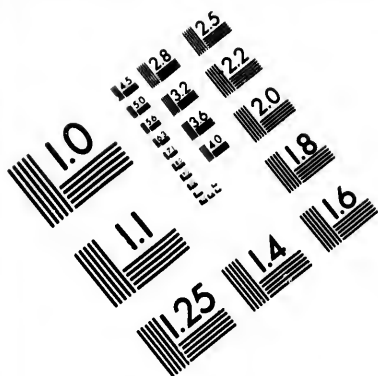
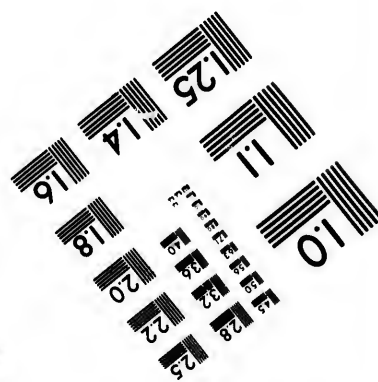
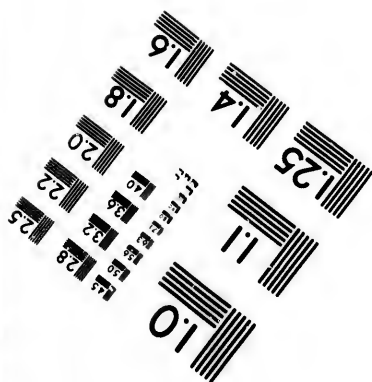
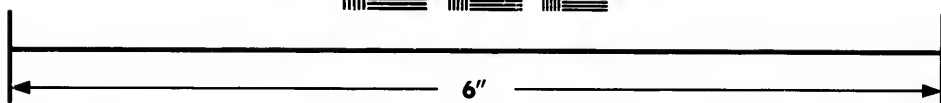
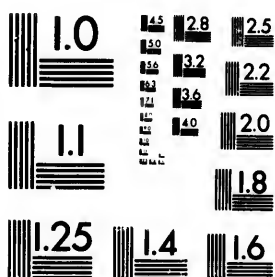


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

18 20 22 25
16 19 21 24
14 17 23 26
12 15 27 28

10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45
46
47
48
49
50
51
52
53
54
55
56
57
58
59
60
61
62
63
64
65
66
67
68
69
70
71
72
73
74
75
76
77
78
79
80
81
82
83
84
85
86
87
88
89
90
91
92
93
94
95
96
97
98
99
100

ing in the year 1586, engaged a vessel bound from Manilla to America. However the present plan of navigation is not entirely approved of by the English admiral; and as it may be of use to the Spaniards sailing on these seas to be acquainted with the opinion of such an expert and celebrated navigator as lord Anson, I shall add that his writer Walter, book III. chap. 8. speaking again of the route betwixt the Philippine islands and Acapulco, treats with great ridicule the extraordinary precautions in the instructions given to the galleon at Manilla, as rendering the voyage more tedious and sickly. The captain is ordered not to go beyond 30 deg. northward: whereas says he if they stood to the 40 or 45th, they would be assisted by the trade winds; and thus freed from the embarrassments which they now labour under from the restriction not to make sail. In this latitude also they would find the westerly winds much stronger and brisker. According to their own journals they are often five or six weeks in getting into the latitude of 30 degrees. Whereas in a north easterly or northerly course, they would in the * fourth part of

* Mr. Walter's words are as follows: " It appears from those journals of theirs which I have seen, that they are often a month or six weeks after laying the land, before they

of the time reach the latitude of 40 degrees, where the westerly winds would much sooner carry them on the coast of California.

The present usual route of the galleon is to stand to the northward, but no further than the latitude of 30 degrees, till they fall in with the westerly winds. By the help of these she stretches in the same parallel along the tremendous space of 96 degrees of longitude from cape Spiritu Santo, till she finds the sea covered with a floating herb, thought to be sea wrack. This indicates that they are near California: then they sing a Te Deum; but do not make the coast till they come into a lower latitude, by reason of the many islands and shoals. They steer away southward, and in their extreme precaution do not endeavour to come within sight of land, till they find themselves near cape San Lucas; and this for ascertaining the reckoning, and receiving intelligence whether there are any enemies looking out for them. In all this immense tract, there is not a single harbour to put into. The only expedient for procuring water is from the rains

they get into the latitude of 30 degrees: whereas with a more northerly course it might be easily done in less than a fortnight." The author it must be observed, relies on the French translation, which seems in some instances, to deviate so far from Mr. Walter's words as to mistake his meaning.

which

which are generally regular betwixt the 30th and 40th degrees. This long continuance in a ship at sea produces a scurvy, which sweeps away great numbers of the people on board. But says he, were they to stand northward to the 40th or 45th degree, they would be delivered from the scurvy, the want of water and of harbours, which bring such extreme sufferings among them, only for the inconveniency of a rougher sea and harder gales. To support this opinion, Mr. Walter advances an instance, though in truth, instead of favouring his assertion, any commander of a Philippine ship who should follow his opinion, would find the great inconveniency of it. He says that a French ship in 1721, by pursuing the course which he delineates came from China to Valle de Nanderas on the coast of Mexico in less than fifty days: but he adds, that in that short space of time the scurvy made such a havock on board, that she had only five or six remaining alive. If this unfortunate ship did not, as it appears, put in any where, I am not at all surpris'd at that calamity, as she had stood very far to the northward. We know from experience with what violence the scurvy rages in the higher latitudes: we read of it with pity in the narratives of the voyages from our seas to the N. to Hudson's bay, Baffin's bay and others.

It appears from the late voyages of the Russians to the most northern parts of the South-sea, of which we have given an account: it appears from the former voyages of our countrymen; and lastly it appears even in the surveys of the Californian gulf, though its highest latitude is short of 33 degrees. But if that latitude of 40 or 45 afforded a harbour or settlement where the ship could put in, where the scurvy might be stopped in its first stage by the fresh air, acids and bitter fruits and vegetables, fresh provisions and other remedies: Lastly where a ship might supply itself with water and provisions, the scurvy would indeed be less to be dreaded than in the present route from the Philippines: so that I think that Mr. Walter, when he was for strengthening his commander's opinion, instead of that unlucky instance of the French ship might have introduced another much more to the purpose, universally known, and likewise of a French ship *Le Saint Antoine de Padone* commanded by monsieur Frondal who in a voyage in the months of May, June and July 1709, sailed from China to America, stood northward to 45 degrees of latitude and in the 197th degree of longitude from the common meridian of the island of Ferro very near the meridian of the Antipodes of Paris, where the westerly winds carried him to America.

Nevertheless

Nevertheless the scurvy did not rage in his ship as in that other desolated ship, which put in to Valle de Nanderas; nor so much as is usually felt in the Philippine galleon: But this was owing to monsieur Frondal's prudence in touching on the barren and open coast of California, in the latitude of 31 degrees: and the consequences of this precaution, though in such a wild place, enabled him prosperously to continue his voyage. How much would the condition of the ship have been bettered had he met with a commodious colony, where he might have been furnished with medicines, provisions and other refreshments.

The inference from the premises is, that lord Anson's opinion concerning the course of the voyage from the Philippine islands is very just. But withal it is to be considered that from putting it in practice, it is of absolute necessity to have a settlement of Spaniards or of Indians friends to the Spaniards; or a well provided garrison or colony at Puerto de San Diego, or Monte Rey, or Cabo Mendocino, or some other more distant part to be a fixed and safe receptacle for the Philippine galleons; as such an establishment is of great advantage to these islands, it may not possibly be difficult, that at present such a colony or garrison may be settled from them, under the same measures and
pro-

provisos. That it has been desired above a century and a half; and was endowed by king Philip III.

Walter adds, that the cargo of the galleon (which tho' settled at six hundred thousand dollars always exceeds that value) is at its return shared among the converts of Manilla, and that the jesuits have the greatest and best part of it. Possibly lord Anson or his writer received this information from some interloper who had been prisoner there, and an enemy of all the religious orders in the Philippines; and particularly of the jesuits. Though it seems more probable, that the writer's view in this animadversion on the religious orders was to gratify the publick at London. It is not worth while to enter into a formal confutation of it, all Spain, America and the Philippine islands being very well apprized of the manner of carrying on this commerce; and of the regulations and ordinances which at all times have been made concerning it. The chief part of the cargo of the galleons belongs to the merchants of those islands; and consequently the produce of them at their return. The religious indeed are allowed a small part of its tonnage, as otherwise how could they by way of exchange provide themselves with those American and European goods they stand in need of. This

portion is regulated for all without any greater distinction or advantage to the jesuits than the others : and so far are they from offering to transgress the stated limits, that examples may be produced of innumerable complaints, that the religious have been defrauded even in what has been allowed them, and settled by ordinances. Thus Walter's assertion is entirely false : and in America and the Philippine islands will be matter of laughter. But there was a necessity of asserting this under the shelter of his lord's authority, in order to spread a belief in England that the interests and views which carry the jesuits and other catholic religious to the Indies, are the same with those which carry the English to their colonies ; and that at the Philippine islands, instead of being catechists and fathers of souls, their time is taken up with lucre, as the only merchants there.

Yet it was not sufficient that the jesuits should be represented as at the head of the Manilla commerce, though they there, more than in any other part, labour under great poverty, fatigue, and opposition ; the rancour and horror with which the English protestants are filled against the jesuits, deserved something more from Walter's pen. Accordingly for their farther gratification he avails himself of the connection

nection betwixt the Philippine islands and California; of whose missions and their present state, he for this reason thinks, are not to be passed over in silence. He says, that though from the first discovery of California, some missionaries have visited it from time to time; their services were of no effect, till the jesuits, animated and supported by a large donation from the marquis de Valero, a nobleman of great liberality and devotion, came over to this peninsula and settled a considerable mission. From what we have written it appears that Walter is very much misinformed concerning the settlement of the missions in California, tho' without stirring out of Europe, he might have found a sufficient account of them in the *Lettres Edificantes*, *More's Historical Dictionary*, and other books. The marquis de Valero when viceroy found the missions already established, and though his generosity and devotion are not to be called in question; he never gave any thing of his own to the missions of California, as his glorious predecessor the duke de Linures had done. Walter adds, that the principal settlement of the jesuits is at cape San Lucas, where they have got together a considerable number of Indians, and been at the pains to instruct them in agriculture and mechanic arts. They now make no small quantity of

wine, the taste of which resembles that of a middling Madeira. Here is another mistake, for till the erection of the new garrison in 1736, after the murder of the venerable fathers Carranco and Tamaral, missions were not re-established about cape San Lucas; and the missions there are very inconsiderable, with regard to the number and character of their Indians. Their vintages are scarce worth mentioning: but a great deal of wine is brought thither for exportation, as nearly all that California produces is carried abroad; the use of that liquor being justly prohibited to the Indians.

Mr. Walter is further pleased to write, that the jesuits are the only masters of the Californian trade, that all their labours have no other view than the good of the society; and that the attention of the missionaries is engaged about the Manilla galleon; of which their convents of the said city are the principal proprietors and adventurers. For this purpose, he says, they take great care to provide all sorts of refreshments ready for this ship; and at cape San Lucas, a constant watch is kept to look out for any of the enemy's ships, who may be lying in wait for the galleon in her return from the Philippine islands; this being the best station in the world to wait for her. In consequence of these measures concerted betwixt

twixt the jesuits of Manilla and of California; the captain of the galleon is directed to fall in with the land N. of cape San Lucas, and the inhabitants on sight of the ship, are to light certain fires; and at sight of these signals the captain sends his long-boat ashore with twenty men well armed, who carry the letters from the jesuits of Manilla to their brethren of California, and bring aboard the provisions which were kept in readiness: as likewise what intelligence there may be concerning any enemies on the coast. If the captain by these advices, finds that he has nothing to apprehend, he is to proceed for cape San Lucas, thence to cape Corientes, and then coast it along for Aca-pulco.

Thus far mr. Walter, who deserves credit, with regard to the missionary jesuits of cape San Lucas, who take great care to provide refreshments for the Philippine galleon; and he might likewise have added, for the reception, relief, and cure of the sick. This office of charity and good policy, the jesuits alone acknowledge to be below any return; at least it is very unequal to the fervour of their desires, which must be imputed to the extreme barrenness of the country. Tho' this assistance, the look-out kept at the cape, and the order for the Philippine ship to touch there, are not owing to any measures

taken by the jesuits ; but to the wise provisions made by the kings of Spain, who, from the commencement of the Philippine trade, saw the necessity that the ships should have a secure reception in California : and this, among others, was the capital motive for the vast expences and powerful armaments by which they have so often endeavoured at the reduction of this peninsula ; and for settling colonies and garrisons, and making harbours. I shall add, that the watch kept to look out for any enemies on the coast, and for making the signals to the galleon, consists of the soldiery belonging to the new garrison of San Lucas. This garrison the society petitioned for, as a necessary safe-guard to its missions ; but it was in La Paz bay, within the gulf, whither the galleon could not come, that it was erected, and not at the cape. At last the garrison was erected ; and very wisely the cape was the place, that it might serve as a receptacle for the galleons. But it was erected without any solicitation of the society, and purely at the request of the Philipppines, convinced of its necessity by repeated damages, and a dear-bought experience. It was also erected by a viceroy, of whom, though bred up in the bosom of the company, none but a foreigner would advance that he followed the measures calculated by the jesuits

jesuits purely for their advantage. Were there no other proofs of the advantages of California, and the garrisons; the actions of this very squadron of Anson's affords sufficient, since California being now reduced, peopled with Spaniards, and furnished with garrisons, it could not shelter itself there for surprising the Philippine galleon, though the writer himself says, that it is the best station in the world for expecting her. Yet he chose rather to cross all the South-sea as far as the island of Tinian; and not without great danger, as another writes, placed himself betwixt the Marian and Philippine islands, in order to attack her in the streights of St. Bernardino.

As to the trade of California, setting aside the diving and purchasing pearls, the manner of which I have shewn, and likewise, that the jesuits and soldiers have no share in it; I frankly own that the whole commerce of the peninsula is in the hands of the jesuits. And if I should not own it, the thing would declare itself. As for what commerce it has, what Europeans can carry it on if there are no others than jesuits? But if mr. Walter envies us this commerce, I do most earnestly desire, in return for his compliment, that the trade of England with Spain may one day, and the sooner the better, be equal to this. The

B b 4

only

only commodity exported from California is the little wine made here and there in missions, and sold in New Spain. This is its only product, no other commodity, merchandize, or manufacture, can be exported hence, as it neither has, nor is there any hopes of its having any. On the contrary, there is scarce any thing for use or consumption but what must be brought from abroad: and if for want of vessels, by bad weather or other misfortunes, their supplies are delayed, the inland missionaries are reduced to the nakedness and hunger of the Indians, and obliged to live on roots, herbs, and wild fruits. The only ship which has touched at the peninsula for some years, was the galleon from the Philippine islands, as we have seen; the captain of which in return for the refreshments, generously made a present to the missionary of cape San Lucas of some things he had on board. This is the whole commerce, of which the jesuits are the sole masters in California. Would mr. Walter wish that heaven would hear the prayers of him who should desire to see the whole traffic of England enlarged to such an exalted pitch?

That the jesuits take all these fatigues upon them only for the good of the society, is a certain truth; and which I readily grant to mr. Walter; for the society is not a detached
order

order only for itself, but relative and for the public. It is originated from God, and by him was established under such rules, such discipline and government as are admired even by its greatest enemies, purely for the service of his catholic church : and that its individuals should faithfully serve the respective nations of which they are subjects, throughout the whole extent of their institutes. Therefore the good of the society of jesuits is only to answer those ends, to labour heroically in the vineyard of their master, without care, without hope, without desire, and even without acceptance of any recompence, though lawful : for it labours to be useful to the catholic church, and likewise useful to the temporal and spiritual welfare of the nations, of whom they are respectively a part under the rules of their profession. In this sense indeed, the company takes on itself such fatigues and solitudes, only for its own good ; that is to say, for the salvation of the souls of the jesuits, and the spiritual and temporal good and salvation of their neighbours. This is their intention : this is their view ; but this is not what the writer means, nor perhaps believes.

Lastly, doubtless mr. Walter, zealous for the welfare of the Spanish nation, though an enemy, and acting in hostilities against it,

it, says, that the Philippine trade is very pernicious to Spain, as the silks from China, and cottons from Coromandel, hinder in America the sale and exportation of the silk and woollen manufactures of Valencia, and other cities in Spain; and that don Joseph Patinho was in the year 1725, for abolishing this trade; but the interest of the jesuits averted the blow. Could I be diverted by slender considerations, when a great advantage to our nation is called in question, I should be silent on this head, lest it should be thought that my apology for the Philippine trade proceeds from the jesuits having, according to mr. Walter, the capital concern in it. Possibly he may have known that the jesuits in treating of their missions being reminded of it by the very situation, might awaken the former anxieties, or endeavours of the Spanish nation, for obtaining the advantages offered to it by the East-India commerce, though well regulated betwixt the several branches of the nation; and by that political finesse was for imposing upon them by this fear. However it be, this is too mean a motive to make any impression on me. These are facts known in Asia, America, and Europe; of a nature not to be hid; and of which any one may easily acquire information. The bare assertion of mr. Walter will not preponderate against the

the sight of the whole world, and especially in facts of which he could be no witness. On the other hand, the equitable part of our nation, for whom I write, will do justice to my candour and good intention : and though they may not agree with my sentiments, I promise myself that they will, at least, not suspect me of having any other view than the service of God, and the welfare of the public.

On this account I find myself obliged briefly to say, that I forbear declaring, whether on the present footing the trade from the Philippine islands be pernicious to Spain or not ; but that there is no method or way whereby not only the present minute commerce, but even one infinitely greater, may be so modelled, as not to be pernicious either to the crown in general, whose subjects the inhabitants of both parts are, or in particular to Old Spain, is what I cannot believe. What those measures may be, is as foreign to my province as it is above my capacity. What I know is, that in the reign of Charles V. Spain saw itself at the height of its prosperity. The number of its towns and inhabitants, which is the basis of the happiness of a state, was much greater : not only the cities, but the smallest places swarmed with people and manufactures. The products of the country were double ; and the same

same increase was seen in the cattle. Spain carried on a trade of its own commodities and in its own ships into Italy, France, England, Flanders, and the north; had in all places Spanish merchants and factors, as may be seen in the ordinances of the consulado, or court of merchants at Burgos: likewise vast cargoes for the Indies; and these chiefly consisted of its own products and manufactures, the staple of which was Toledo, where they were laid up as in a general magazine; consequently the profits of commerce, the money, and other amazing riches of the Indies remained within the nation, without, or at least, very little of it being dissipated among strangers, by a detrimental commerce. Even then subsisted in their full vigour, the wise regulations of the catholic kings in favour of the domestic and foreign active commerce and navigation of Spain; which were in substance the same as those to which other nations owe their commerce and naval power. Such were the erecting of new docks, the encouragement of all naval arts, the appointing of rewards for ship building; procuring timber and cordage; giving privileges to those of great burthen, and stowing the cargoes with admirable order; abolishing the abuses and vexations of the customs and port fees; issuing equitable ordinances concerning

ing all trades and callings within the kingdom, and causing them to be strictly observed ; removing the incumbrances of the multiplicity of jurisdictions ; securing the roads by the *Santas Hermandades** ; frequently rectifying the coin ; supporting, but not multiplying holidays ; suppressing tolls and duties of great vexation to the subject, and little advantage to the public ; lowering the customs and duties ; and setting them particularly in books of rates drawn up with great perspicuity, to prevent all frauds and extortions ; to lay a duty of half as much more on the importation of home goods, except unwrought goods, and a few others ; ordering at some ports, that on bringing in goods to the kingdom, security should be given to carry out the value in other goods of the country ; to put cities and provinces on an equal footing in commercial advantages, as near as possible ; to promote every where a plenty of the usual provisions, by regulating the prices of them ; to oblige the heads of the nation, the magistrates of cities, and the nobility of the kingdom to a steady and rigorous execution of these orders ; and many

* A brotherhood in Spain, instituted in times of great confusion to suppress robbers : and continues to this day, by which traveling is very safe, the brotherhood being spread through all Spain.

others relating to all political affairs: by which for many years the body of the monarchy subsisted in such power, extent, and glory, as excited the rage and jealousy of all Europe. This was the constitution of the nation in the time of Charles V. and by this it supported with honour, the great enterprizes and immense expenditures, sometimes necessary, sometimes voluntary, of that enterprising monarch. Notwithstanding this great prosperity of Spain at that time, it was then and in the subsequent years, that the repeated endeavours before-mentioned for securing a part of the East-India commerce on the side of America were made. It was not then held a detriment to the commerce of Old Spain in America, to bring hither the spices, and other goods from the islands and eastern coast of Asia; and this at a time when Spain had such a vast surplus for sale; and when its ships and large caravillas went to most parts of the world loaded with its products and manufactures. Why may not the same thing happen again: even if Spain had more goods for exportation than at present; and its own ships be loaded with them, and not those of foreigners, as is now chiefly the case? At that time the consumers in America were few, and might easily be supplied with goods from Spain. At present their numbers

numbers are great; Spain cannot support them. At that time the manufactures and products of Spain were many; at present few; then the silver and gold came at last to the Spanish artificers and workmen; now at second-hand to foreigners: then there was no commercial rivalry in Asia, except with the Portuguese, and they were our friends, and as it were our brethren. At present all nations have assumed their parts. Nevertheless at that time the valuable commerce of the East-Indies was thought worth pursuing by such a variety of measures. And shall we be brought to think, that the Spanish nation cannot by any means restore it; that in its present state it is very pernicious, and that small as it is should be relinquished, without attention to the great opportunities of increasing it?

So Mr. Walter thinks; and I believe he would be not a little pleased, could he infuse the same notions among the Spaniards. As to his own nation I observe that in his narrative, he very magnificently sets forth the advantage accruing to it from the commerce with China and the whole coast of the East Indies, and dwells on the great importance to the British crown, of supporting and increasing their settlements in those parts. On the other hand we have seen the strenuous endeavours of the
English

English in seeking a shorter passage thither from England, and the advantages which would result from such a discovery. Besides, the ardent emulation betwixt the English and French East India companies proves how very far those two nations are from thinking that their East Indian trade hurts their European.

According to this, who will believe that the prodigious commerce of the English in the East Indies, is an extreme advantage to the crown of Great Britain, which deluges the world with goods, stuffs and manufactures of all kinds; and at the same time must on the contrary be persuaded that the annual trade of a single ship from the Philippines is not only at present pernicious (which I protest against) and hurtful to the crown of Spain, because the silks of China and cottons of Coromandel hinder the vent of the few silks and stuffs made in Valencia and the other cities of Spain; but likewise that no measures can be taken for carrying on a commerce with the East Indies by the way of the Philippine islands, that shall not be detrimental to Old Spain. Not only England, but Holland, France, Sweden, Denmark and Prussia, are every day pushing their commerce in the East Indies: yet the Chinese silks and Coromandel cottons are not seen to clog the sale of their own linens and stuffs, great quantities
both

both of the one and the other being imported to Spain in exchange for the money we receive from America. Portugal, which is a part of Spain, carries on an advantageous trade to the East Indies, but not what it might. Like Spain it has possessions in America, where it also has a large consumption of Asiatick goods, which come much cheaper than those of Europe; and is the crown of Spain the only one which cannot follow such an example, and take the measures pointed out to it by all the other nations of Europe, when it has a greater conveniency than all of them?

I am apt to think that Mr. Walter would be very glad if the Spaniards would give over the trade from Manilla, and abandon the Philippine islands themselves, as without an American and European trade, they could not be maintained; that in the mean time the English should find out the so much desired passage to the South sea, by the north of America and above California: which passage is not universally denied, and one day may be found; that they may fortify themselves on both sides of this passage, and thus extend the English dominions from the north to the south of America, so as to border on our possessions. Should English colonies and garrisons be established along the coast of America, on the South sea

beyond cape Mendocino or lower down on California itself: his nation would then without controul reign mistress of this sea and its commerce, and be able to threaten by land and sea the territories of Spain; invade them on occasion from the E. W. N. and S.; hem them in and press them on all sides. But through the divine mercy, and the new spirit which the wise government of the present most auspicious reign has diffused among all ranks in the nation, it is greatly to be hoped that such measures will continue to be taken on the South sea and northern parts of America as will frustrate any designs which may be forming by other nations, who owe their power and grandeur to our neglects.

What Walter affirms of don Joseph Patinho, is absolutely false: and I question whether the English who have had many occasions of being acquainted with the character of that minister, can easily believe that in the year 1725, he was for abolishing the trade to the Philippine islands. About that time very warm disputes were carried on betwixt the merchants of the Philippines and those of New Spain, concerning the tonnage, quantity and quality of the galleon's cargo. But that this circumspect and wise minister, who was very far from regulating the general concerns of the crown by the contests
of

of a few traders, should have thought of extinguishing this commerce, is an assertion entirely groundless. But that the interest of the society of jesuits averted the blow, is a downright falsity. Don Joseph Patinho was incapable of being carried away by any influence whatsoever, so as to do, or permit to be done, in affairs of such weight, what others thought fit. Likewise in all those mighty debates the society, as may be demonstrated, did not in the least interfere. After all, if this minister should ever have entertained a thought of this nature, relating to the commerce of the East Indies, the reader will be pleased to contrast such a judgment, with the opinion * attributed to the sagacious cardinal Alberoni, who, a few years before, was minister to the same prince; and to whom the worthy Mr. Patinho chiefly owed his preferment.

* Part III. Sect. XIII.

F I N I S.

